



- Go to [\*\*awmi.net/sg418\*\*](http://awmi.net/sg418) to download PDFs of the following resources for each lesson in this study guide:
  - Outlines
  - Discipleship Questions
  - Scriptures
- Share as many copies as you'd like.
- These documents are not for resale.



# Spirit, Soul & Body

STUDY GUIDE

Andrew Wommack

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are taken from the *King James Version* of the Bible.

*Spirit, Soul & Body Study Guide*  
ISBN: 978-1-59548-060-6

Copyright © 2008, 2018 by Andrew Wommack Ministries Inc.  
PO Box 3333  
Colorado Springs CO 80934-3333

Published by Andrew Wommack Ministries Inc.  
awmi.net

Printed in the United States of America. All rights reserved under International Copyright Law. Contents and/or cover may not be reproduced in whole or part in any form without the express written consent of the Publisher.

# Contents

Introduction.....	vii
How to Use Your Study Guide.....	viii
<b>Lesson 1 God’s Mirror .....</b>	<b>1</b>
Outline .....	4
Teacher’s Guide .....	5
Discipleship Questions .....	6
Answer Key .....	8
Scriptures .....	10
<b>Lesson 2 All Things New .....</b>	<b>11</b>
Outline .....	14
Teacher’s Guide .....	15
Discipleship Questions .....	16
Answer Key .....	17
Scriptures .....	18
<b>Lesson 3 The Pivot Point.....</b>	<b>19</b>
Outline .....	22
Teacher’s Guide .....	24
Discipleship Questions .....	26
Answer Key .....	27
Scriptures .....	28
<b>Lesson 4 Renew, Acknowledge &amp; Experience.....</b>	<b>29</b>
Outline .....	33
Teacher’s Guide .....	35
Additional Information .....	37
Discipleship Questions .....	38
Answer Key .....	40
Scriptures .....	41
<b>Lesson 5 Reality—Carnal or Spiritual? .....</b>	<b>43</b>
Outline .....	46
Teacher’s Guide .....	48
Discipleship Questions .....	50
Answer Key .....	52
Scriptures .....	54

<b>Lesson 6</b>	<b>Righteous &amp; Holy.....</b>	<b>55</b>
	Outline .....	57
	Teacher’s Guide .....	59
	Discipleship Questions .....	60
	Answer Key .....	61
	Scriptures .....	62
<b>Lesson 7</b>	<b>One with Jesus.....</b>	<b>63</b>
	Outline .....	66
	Teacher’s Guide .....	68
	Discipleship Questions .....	69
	Answer Key .....	70
	Scriptures .....	71
<b>Lesson 8</b>	<b>Sealed!.....</b>	<b>73</b>
	Outline .....	77
	Teacher’s Guide .....	79
	Additional Information .....	81
	Discipleship Questions .....	83
	Answer Key .....	84
	Scriptures .....	85
<b>Lesson 9</b>	<b>Eternal Redemption.....</b>	<b>87</b>
	Outline .....	91
	Teacher’s Guide .....	94
	Discipleship Questions .....	95
	Answer Key .....	97
	Scriptures .....	99
<b>Lesson 10</b>	<b>Standard Gospel Questions.....</b>	<b>101</b>
	Outline .....	105
	Teacher’s Guide .....	107
	Additional Information .....	109
	Discipleship Questions .....	110
	Answer Key .....	112
	Scriptures .....	113
<b>Lesson 11</b>	<b>Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again? .....</b>	<b>115</b>
	Outline .....	119
	Teacher’s Guide .....	121
	Additional Information .....	123
	Discipleship Questions .....	125
	Answer Key .....	126
	Scriptures .....	127

<b>Lesson 12 Fullness Received .....</b>	<b>129</b>
Outline .....	132
Teacher’s Guide .....	134
Discipleship Questions .....	136
Answer Key .....	138
Scriptures .....	140
<b>Lesson 13 God’s Supernatural Faith .....</b>	<b>143</b>
Outline .....	147
Teacher’s Guide .....	149
Discipleship Questions .....	151
Answer Key .....	153
Scriptures .....	154
<b>Lesson 14 Like Precious Faith .....</b>	<b>155</b>
Outline .....	159
Teacher’s Guide .....	161
Discipleship Questions .....	162
Answer Key .....	164
Scriptures .....	166
<b>Lesson 15 Your Spirit Knows All Things .....</b>	<b>169</b>
Outline .....	172
Teacher’s Guide .....	174
Discipleship Questions .....	176
Answer Key .....	178
Scriptures .....	179
<b>Lesson 16 Releasing the Mind of Christ .....</b>	<b>181</b>
Outline .....	185
Teacher’s Guide .....	188
Additional Informational .....	190
Discipleship Questions .....	192
Answer Key .....	194
Scriptures .....	196
<b>Lesson 17 Empowerment Required .....</b>	<b>199</b>
Outline .....	201
Teacher’s Guide .....	203
Discipleship Questions .....	205
Answer Key .....	207
Scriptures .....	208

<b>Lesson 18 Spirit vs. Flesh .....</b>	<b>209</b>
Outline .....	212
Teacher's Guide .....	214
Discipleship Questions .....	216
Answer Key .....	218
Scriptures .....	219
<b>Lesson 19 Walk in the Spirit.....</b>	<b>221</b>
Outline .....	224
Teacher's Guide .....	226
Discipleship Questions .....	228
Answer Key .....	229
Scriptures .....	230
<b>Lesson 20 The Impossible Life .....</b>	<b>231</b>
Outline .....	234
Teacher's Guide .....	236
Additional Information .....	237
Discipleship Questions .....	238
Answer Key .....	240
Scriptures .....	241
<b>Lesson 21 Releasing Your True Identity .....</b>	<b>243</b>
Outline .....	246
Teacher's Guide .....	248
Discipleship Questions .....	249
Answer Key .....	251
Scriptures .....	253
<b>Lesson 22 Mind Your Spirit .....</b>	<b>255</b>
Outline .....	259
Teacher's Guide .....	261
Additional Information .....	263
Discipleship Questions .....	264
Answer Key .....	266
Scriptures .....	268
<b>Lesson 23 Time to Leave!.....</b>	<b>269</b>
Outline .....	273
Teacher's Guide .....	275
Additional Information .....	277
Discipleship Questions .....	278
Answer Key .....	279
Scriptures .....	280



# Introduction

On March 23, 1968, I had a supernatural encounter with the Lord that revolutionized my entire life. For the next four and a half months, God's love completely overwhelmed me both day and night! Tasting God's presence in such a profound way ruined me for ordinary life. My expectations of my relationship with the Lord and my hopes of what He'd do through me literally shot through the roof. As far as I was concerned, Jesus could do anything!

However, once the emotion of it finally subsided, I felt worse than ever before. My inner expectations and my everyday experience remained worlds apart! The spiritual realities I knew in my heart just weren't manifesting themselves in the physical realm any longer. I longed to experience God again in that same way.

During this period of time, I was drafted and sent to Vietnam. Over there, temptations abounded! Many times I was the only Christian I knew. Everyone else gave themselves to the drugs, alcohol, and prostitutes that were so readily available. Even the bunker where I lived was papered with pornographic images—walls, ceiling, everywhere! Although this constant pressure to sin seemed unbearable at times, I refused to give in.

Out of sheer desperation, I started seeking the Lord by praying and studying the Bible as much as sixteen hours a day. This gnawing, inner frustration motivated my quest to discover how I could get from where I was to where I knew in my heart I could be. I knew Vietnam would change me, so I figured it might as well be for the good!

God began renewing my mind through His Word. Then I started experiencing that same divine reality as before—only this time it wasn't just in a physical, emotional way. The Lord revealed truths that changed my thinking and released His power in me. Joy and excitement came back again, but now they were based on understanding from the Word. I could recall Scripture and rejoice in it any time I wanted. In this way, God's Word began to produce an abiding stability in my life.

This understanding of spirit, soul, and body was one of the first revelations I received through studying the Bible. It not only alleviated the frustration and confusion I had, but it also served as a foundation for almost everything the Lord has shown me since. These important truths freed me from the bondage of much wrong thinking and enabled me to consistently experience God's supernatural power. Personally, I cannot comprehend how anyone can truly prosper in their relationship with God apart from understanding this basic revelation!

Today I'm just as excited about this understanding of spirit, soul, and body as when God first showed it to me all those years ago. In fact, I've seen the Lord set more people free through this one teaching than almost anything else I've ever ministered. This study has the potential to revolutionize your entire Christian life!

# How to Use Your Study Guide

Whether you are teaching a class, leading a small group, discipling an individual, or studying on your own, this study guide is designed for you! Here's how it works:

Each lesson consists of the **Lesson** text, **Outline**, **Teacher's Guide**, **Discipleship Questions**, **Answer Key**, and **Scriptures**. Some Lessons also have additional information.

## **Outline for Group Study:**

- I. If possible, briefly review the previous lesson by going over the **Answer Key/Teacher's Guide** answers for the **Discipleship Questions/Teacher's Guide** questions.
- II. Read the current **Lesson** text or **Teacher's Guide** aloud.
  - A. Be sure that each student has a copy of the **Outline**.
  - B. While the **Lesson** text or **Teacher's Guide** is being read, students should use their **Outlines** to follow along.
- III. Once the **Lesson** text or **Teacher's Guide** is read, facilitate discussion and study using the **Discipleship Questions/Teacher's Guide** questions (all questions are the same).
  - A. Read one question at a time.
  - B. The group should use their **Outlines** to assist with answering the questions.
  - C. Have them read aloud each specifically mentioned scripture before answering the question.
  - D. Discuss the answer/point from the **Lesson** text as desired.
  - E. As much as possible, keep the discussion centered on the scriptures and the **Lesson** text or **Teacher's Guide** points at hand.
  - F. Remember, the goal is understanding (Matt. 13:19).
  - G. One individual should not dominate the discussion; instead, try to draw out the quieter ones for the group conversation.
  - H. Repeat the process until all of the questions are discussed/answered.

Materials Needed:

Study guide, Bible, and enough copies of the **Outline**, **Discipleship Questions**, and **Scriptures** for each student. (PDFs of the **Outlines**, **Discipleship Questions**, and **Scriptures** can be downloaded via the URL located on the first page of this study guide.)

## **Outline for Personal Study:**

- I. Read the current **Lesson** text or **Teacher's Guide**.
  - A. Read additional information, if provided.
  - B. Meditate on the given scriptures as desired.
- II. Answer the corresponding **Discipleship Questions/Teacher's Guide** questions.
- III. Check your work with the **Answer Key/Teacher's Guide** answers.

Materials Needed:

Study guide, Bible, and a writing utensil.

# God's Mirror

## Lesson 1



**“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole *spirit and soul and body* be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ” (1 Thess. 5:23, emphasis mine).**

Even though God’s Word clearly teaches that we are three-part beings, very few Christians practice a functional understanding of spirit, soul, and body in their everyday lives. Most people actually believe that they’re only made up of body and soul. They confuse soul and spirit as being basically the same thing. Therefore, on a day-to-day level, they only acknowledge a physical part and an emotional, mental, inner part (commonly called “personality”).

Even *Strong’s Concordance* fails to distinguish all three! The Greek word for spirit—*pneuma*—is defined as being “the immortal soul.” I don’t mean to criticize anyone’s work, but my study of God’s Word has revealed a very distinct difference between spirit and soul. Therefore, I disagree with this particular definition of the word *pneuma*. Your spirit is your innermost part, not your “immortal soul.”

Your body is obvious. It’s the physical part of you that can be seen in a mirror. If you were talking to me face-to-face, you’d be seeing my body.

However, you’d be speaking to my soul, which is my mental, emotional part. Some people define “soul” as being the mind, will, and emotions. While that’s certainly true, it’s incomplete because your conscience should also be included. Your soul is what most people call their “personality.”

### ***No Natural Access***

You can feel both your body and your soul. If I put my hand on your shoulder, you’d know that I touched you. However, I can also touch you whether I’m physically near or not. By speaking to your soul, I can make you glad, sad, or mad. Through my words, I could “hurt” you without physically touching your body. It’s easy to know how you feel in your body and soul because you’re constantly in touch with them!

By taking a mental inventory, your body can instantly tell you how it feels. You know if your adrenaline is pumping, if you’re tired, if you’re healthy or fighting a cold, if your head aches, or if the shower’s just right. In fact, you don’t even really have to think about it, because your body constantly feeds you such information.

You can also check your soul and know right away how you’re doing. It’s easy to tell if you’re happy or hurt, mentally worn out or sharp and ready to go, or just plain angry. You’d even be aware of fear or depression if it came, because you’re always in touch with your soul.

However, your spirit cannot be accessed in any natural way. Jesus declared:

**“That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit”** (John 3:6).

He meant that there’s no direct connection between the two. They are interrelated, as you’ll later see, but spirit is spirit and flesh is flesh. You simply cannot contact your spirit through your emotions or your physical body. Herein lies one of the great problems of the Christian life!

If you don’t understand that spiritual reality can’t be felt, then you’ll be confused when God’s Word declares that you have the same power that raised Jesus from the dead (Eph. 1:18-20). If you think truth can be discerned through your natural senses, then you’ll be baffled when the Bible says that you’re a brand-new creature who can do the same miraculous works that Jesus did (2 Cor. 5:17 and John 14:12). Without understanding spirit, soul, and body, you’ll search your body and soul in bewilderment wondering, *Where is it? I don’t really have that kind of power in me. The Bible is so hard to understand!* If you can’t see, taste, hear, smell, or touch what the Word reveals about you, you’ll immediately be thrown into conflict. This apparent disparity between your experience and God’s Word will cause you to throw up your hands in frustration and conclude, “It must not be true!”

### ***Unlocking the Spirit Realm***

Understanding spirit, soul, and body unlocks the spirit realm so you can experience who you are and what you have in Christ!

Since the spirit realm can’t be naturally seen or felt, the only way to accurately perceive spiritual truth is through the Bible. Simply take God’s Word and believe it!

Jesus said:

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life”** (John 6:63).

God’s Word reveals spiritual reality. If you want to know what your spirit is like, you must find out from the Word. You can’t just go by emotion or some other type of perception. God’s Word is spirit and life!

When you look into the Bible, you behold yourself in the spirit.

**“For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty [God’s Word—specifically the New Testament], and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed”** (James 1:23-25, brackets mine).

God’s Word is a spiritual mirror!

### *A Perfect Reflection*

When you look at your face in a mirror, you aren't really seeing yourself. Rather, you're viewing a reflection. In fact, your eyes have never looked directly into your own face. Think about it—you've always seen a reflection! Even though it's only a representation, you've learned to trust it.

If you want to know if your hair is combed or if your makeup is on, you don't just go by how you feel. Since those things can't be felt, you must look in a mirror and then trust what you see. It's the same with your born-again spirit.

God's Word perfectly reflects who you are in the spirit. It's the only way you can know. You can't just assume "If I had God's power inside of me, I'd be aware of it," because that which is Spirit is spirit and that which is flesh is flesh. It would be like trying to feel if your makeup was on or if your hair was combed. Those things just can't be felt. You must look in God's mirror and trust the spiritual reality you see!

# God's Mirror

## Lesson 1 – Outline

1. We are three-part beings: spirit, soul, and body.

**“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole *spirit and soul and body* be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ” (1 Thess. 5:23, emphasis mine).**

- A. Spirit – Our innermost part.
- B. Soul – Our mental, emotional part. Includes the mind, will, emotions, and conscience. Often called “personality.”
- C. Body – Our physical part.

2. You can feel both your body and your soul, but your spirit cannot be accessed in any natural way.

**“That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit” (John 3:6).**

- A. No direct connection between spirit and flesh (flesh = soul and body).
- B. Can't contact your spirit through your emotions or physical body.
- C. Understanding spirit, soul, and body unlocks the spirit realm so you can experience who you are and what you have in Christ.

3. God's Word is the only accurate way to perceive the spirit realm.

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

- A. God's Word is spirit and life.
- B. God's Word reveals spiritual reality.

4. God's Word is a spiritual mirror.

**“For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty [God's Word—specifically the New Testament], and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed” (James 1:23-25, brackets mine).**

- A. God's Word perfectly reflects who you are in the spirit.
- B. Trust the spiritual reality you see in the Word.

# God's Mirror

## *Lesson 1 – Teacher's Guide*

1. Although the Bible clearly reveals that we are three-part beings—made up of spirit, soul, and body (1 Thess. 5:23)—very few Christians practice a functional understanding of this in their everyday lives. Most people actually believe that they're only made up of body and soul. They confuse soul and spirit as being basically the same thing.

Our spirits are our innermost part. Our souls are our mental, emotional part, which includes our mind, will, emotions, and conscience. It's often called our "personality." Our bodies are our physical part.

2. We can feel both our bodies and our souls, but our spirits can't be accessed in any natural way (John 3:6). There is no direct connection between spirit and flesh. Therefore, we can't contact our spirits through our emotions or our physical bodies. Herein lies one of the great problems of the Christian life!

Without understanding spirit, soul, and body, we become frustrated over the apparent disparity between our experience and God's Word. However, understanding the interaction between the three parts of our beings—spirit, soul, and body—unlocks the spirit realm so we can experience who we are and what we have in Christ.

3. God's Word is the only accurate way we can perceive the spirit realm (John 6:63). God's Word is spirit and life. It reveals spiritual reality. If we want to know what our spirits are like, we must find out from the Word. We can't just go by emotion or some other type of perception. We must look into the Bible in order to see ourselves in the spirit.
4. God's Word is a spiritual mirror (James 1:23-25). It perfectly reflects who we are in the spirit. It's the only way we can know. Therefore, we must learn to trust the spiritual reality we see in the Word.

1. A. Read 1 Thessalonians 5:23. How many parts are we made of? (Three)  
B. Name the parts. (Spirit, soul, and body)  
C. Which one is our physical part? (Body)  
D. Which one is our innermost part? (Spirit)  
E. Which one is often called our "personality"? (Soul)
2. A. What does John 3:6 say? (Spirit is spirit, and flesh is flesh)  
B. What does this mean? (There's no direct connection between the two)  
C. Can we contact our spirits through our emotions or our physical bodies? (No)
3. A. According to John 6:63, God's Word is \_\_\_\_\_. (Spirit and life)  
B. If we want to know what our spirits are like, where must we look? (In the Bible)
4. A. James 1:23-25 reveals God's Word as what? (A spiritual mirror)  
B. Where is the only place we can look to accurately perceive spiritual reality and find out who we are in the spirit? (God's Word)

# God's Mirror

## *Lesson 1 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Read 1 Thessalonians 5:23. Who does the sanctifying?
2. Who is being sanctified?
3. What part(s) is/are being sanctified?
4. In what way will you be preserved?
5. Until when will you be preserved?
6. According to John 3:6, “That which is born of the flesh is \_\_\_\_\_; and that which is born of the Spirit is \_\_\_\_\_.”
7. Is there any direct connection between the two?
8. Read Ephesians 1:18-20. What needs to be enlightened?
9. For what purpose? That you may know:
  - A.
  - B.
  - C.
10. Where are the riches of the glory of His inheritance?
11. Who is a “saint”?
12. The exceeding greatness of His power is toward \_\_\_\_\_ .
13. What mighty power is this? (Verse 20)
14. Read 2 Corinthians 5:17. If someone is “in Christ,” they are a \_\_\_\_\_ .
15. What is true of a “new creature”?
16. God reconciled us to Himself by what or whom?



17. Who was speaking in John 14:12?
18. What two things did He promise us?
19. Who will accomplish these things?
20. Why will they be able to do these things?
21. Read John 6:63. What does the spirit do?
22. What does the flesh do?
23. What are spirit and life?
24. James 1:23-25 compares God's Word to a \_\_\_\_\_.
25. What happens to the person who looks into God's Word, continuing in it, not forgetting what they've heard, but doing it?

# God's Mirror

*Lesson 1 – Answer Key*

1. The very God of peace.
2. You.
3. Your whole spirit, soul, and body.
4. Blameless.
5. The coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.
6. “Flesh,” “spirit.”
7. No.
8. The eyes of your understanding.
9. That you may know:
  - A. The hope of His calling.
  - B. The riches of the glory of His inheritance.
  - C. The exceeding greatness of His power.
10. In the saints.
11. Every born-again believer.
12. Us who believe.
13. The same power He wrought in Christ when He raised Him from the dead and set Him at His own right hand in heavenly places.
14. New creature.
15. A. Old things are passed away.  
B. All things are become new.

16. By Jesus Christ.
17. The Lord Jesus.
18. A. That we will do the same works He did.  
B. And greater works.
19. Those who believe on Jesus.
20. Because Jesus has gone to His Father.
21. It gives life.
22. It profits nothing.
23. The words Jesus has spoken to us, which is God's Word.
24. Mirror.
25. This person will be blessed in their deed.

# **God's Mirror**

## *Lesson 1 – Scriptures*

**“And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly; and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ” (1 Thess. 5:23).**

**“That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit” (John 3:6).**

**“The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places” (Eph. 1:18-20).**

**“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new” (2 Cor. 5:17).**

**“Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father” (John 14:12).**

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

**“For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed” (James 1:23-25).**

# All Things New

## Lesson 2



Every born-again believer has undergone a complete inner transformation.

**“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ” (2 Cor. 5:17-18a).**

Notice how it doesn’t say that all things are *becoming* new or have the potential of being new; these verses declare “old things are passed [past tense] away,” “all things are become [present-tense reality right now] new,” and “all things are of God” (brackets mine).

If you don’t understand spirit, soul, and body, you’re instantly set up for confusion, frustration, and ultimately unbelief when you see a verse like this. After reading about a total change and all things being of God, you look at your body and immediately start wondering, because it hasn’t passed away or become brand new. If you were overweight before receiving the Lord, that didn’t change the moment you got saved! A time will come when you’ll receive a glorified body, but that hasn’t happened yet.

**“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality” (1 Cor. 15:53).**

Although Christ’s atonement provided for you physically, your body has not yet been saved. It’s been purchased, but not yet redeemed.

### *S&H Green Stamps*

As a kid, I collected S&H green stamps. Whenever my mother bought groceries, we would earn stamps according to the amount of the purchase. She gave them to me so I could keep them organized and paste them into a book. Then she’d take me to an S&H Green Stamp Redemption Center to turn in my completed books and choose anything I wanted of equal value from their store. Although the stamps were purchased, they weren’t redeemed until I turned them in. It wasn’t the stamps themselves I wanted, but what I could redeem them for!

Jesus purchased your glorified body through His death, burial, and resurrection. Although full payment has been made, you still have a corrupted body while you wait to receive your immortal, incorruptible one. At this moment, you don’t yet have the redemption of the purchased possession (Eph. 1:14).

Your soul wasn’t saved either! This sounds strange to many people because they use terminology like “I’m a soul winner!” and “I came to see a soul saved” to describe an evangelist and evangelism. In reality, the New Testament only mentions “soul salvation” a few times—and none of them, in context, are talking about the born-again experience (Heb. 10:39; James 1:21,

5:20; and 1 Pet. 1:9). Soul salvation happens when an emotionally discouraged and mentally defeated Christian starts believing God's Word and then experiences victory, peace, and joy again. However, when it comes to being born again, your soul wasn't the part of you that completely changed!

If you were stupid before you were saved, you're still stupid after being saved. If you didn't know math before being born again, you won't instantly know math afterwards either. In fact, if you were depressed before you got saved, you'll stay depressed until you change the way your soul thinks by believing God's Word.

Your soul can be transformed now to the degree you renew your mind, change your attitudes, and conform your values to the Word of God. This should happen, and it's in the process of happening, but it didn't automatically happen. In your soul, old things didn't pass away, and all things haven't yet become new. The transformation of your soul won't be completed until you go to be with Jesus!

### *Where the Change Is Complete!*

When you receive your glorified body, you'll also receive your glorified soul. First Corinthians 13:9-12 reveals how, when that which is perfect is come (your glorified body), your current, partial knowledge will give way to full revelation. You won't know in part anymore, but you'll know all things even as also you are known. That's the coming future fulfillment of transformation and completed change in your body and soul!

However, 2 Corinthians 5:17 clearly states that any person who is in Christ is *right now* a brand-new creature! Old things *have passed* away. All things *have become* new. This total transformation isn't just in process; it's describing a change that's already been done—an accomplished fact.

Where did this complete change occur? According to God's mirror—not in your body and not in your soul, but in your born-again spirit!

Your spirit totally changed at salvation. Upon making Jesus Christ your Lord, your spirit underwent an instant and complete transformation. Typically, your body and soul are both impacted by what happened, but it's not total, nor complete.

People who don't understand that the change took place in their spirit and has to work its way out into the soul and body are usually quite disappointed. "I thought I'd become a brand-new person. Jesus was going to change everything!" Then unbelief takes hold. "But things didn't change, and I'm still the same!" Some may seriously doubt whether or not they were saved. Those who do maintain their salvation often lose faith that they'll ever really experience and enjoy it here in this life.

But the truth is—your spirit has totally changed. You aren't in the process of trying to get anything from God. Everything you'll ever need in the Christian life is already present in its entirety in your spirit. At this very moment, your born-again spirit is as perfect and complete as it'll

ever be throughout all eternity. You won't get a new one when you arrive in heaven, and neither will it need to be matured, completed, or cleaned up from any defilement down here on earth. Your spirit is—right now—as perfect, mature, and complete as Jesus Himself!

# All Things New

## Lesson 2 – Outline

1. Every born-again believer has undergone a complete inner transformation.

**“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ” (2 Cor. 5:17-18a).**

- A. Your body and soul didn’t change when you were born again.
- B. The transformation of your body and soul won’t be completed until you go to be with Jesus.

**“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality” (1 Cor. 15:53).**

- C. The change occurred in your spirit (2 Cor. 5:17).
2. Your spirit totally changed at salvation.
    - A. Your spirit was instantly and completely transformed.
    - B. Everything you’ll ever need in the Christian life is already present in its entirety in your spirit.
    - C. At this very moment, your born-again spirit is as perfect and complete as it’ll ever be throughout all eternity.
    - D. Your spirit is—right now—as perfect, mature, and complete as Jesus Himself.



# All Things New

## *Lesson 2 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Every born-again believer has undergone a complete inner transformation (2 Cor. 5:17-18a). This change occurred in their born-again spirit.

However, our bodies and souls didn’t change when we were born again. Although Jesus purchased our glorified bodies through His death, burial, and resurrection, we still have corrupted bodies while we wait to receive our immortal, incorruptible ones. We don’t yet have the redemption of the purchased possession.

Our souls can be transformed now to the degree we renew our minds, change our attitudes, and conform our values to the Word of God. This should happen, and it’s in the process of happening, but it didn’t automatically happen the instant we were born again. The transformation of our bodies and souls won’t be completed until we go to be with Jesus (1 Cor. 13:9-12 and 15:53).

2. Our spirits totally changed at salvation. They were instantly and completely transformed. Everything we’ll ever need in the Christian life is already present in its entirety in our spirits. At this very moment, our born-again spirits are as perfect and complete as they’ll ever be throughout all eternity. Our spirits are—right now—as perfect, mature, and complete as Jesus Himself.

1. A. Read 2 Corinthians 5:17-18a. What happened when we were born again? (We became a new creature; old things are passed away, all things are become new, and all things are of God)  
B. What parts of this change were completed in the past? (We became new creatures and old things passed away)  
C. What parts of this change are right now present-tense realities? (We are new creatures in Christ; all things are become new, and all things are of God)  
D. Did the change described in 2 Corinthians 5:17-18a occur in our bodies? (No)  
E. Did this change occur in our souls? (No)  
F. Read 1 Corinthians 13:9-12 and 15:53. When will the transformation of our bodies and souls be completed? (Not until we go to be with Jesus)
2. When did the change referred to in 2 Corinthians 5:17-18a take place? (At salvation)

# **All Things New**

## *Lesson 2 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Read 2 Corinthians 5:17-18a. What has passed away?
2. What has become new?
3. What is of God?
4. Read 1 Corinthians 15:53. “For this corruptible must put on \_\_\_\_\_, and this mortal must put on \_\_\_\_\_.”
5. Read Ephesians 1:14. What does the word “earnest” (down payment, or token) imply about our inheritance?
  - A. That we haven’t received the full inheritance yet.
  - B. That the earnest is all we need.
  - C. That we’ve received the full inheritance of what Jesus paid for.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
6. When the redemption of the purchased possession occurs, it will be unto whose glory?
7. Hebrews 10:39, James 1:21 and 5:20, and 1 Peter 1:9 all refer to what?
8. According to these verses, is soul salvation automatic?
9. Read 1 Corinthians 13:9-12. What happens when that which is perfect comes?
10. What did Paul do when he became a man?
11. Now we see through a glass how?
12. Later, how will we see?
13. Later, we will know even as what?
14. According to the lesson, where did the complete change occur?
  - A. In the body of a person.
  - B. In the soul of a person.
  - C. In the surroundings of a person.
  - D. In the born-again spirit of a person.
  - E. In the actions of a person.

# **All Things New**

*Lesson 2 – Answer Key*

1. Old things.
2. All things.
3. All things.
4. “Incorruption,” “immortality.”
5. A. That we haven’t received the full inheritance yet.
6. God’s.
7. Soul salvation.
8. No.
9. That which is in part shall be done away.
10. He put away childish things.
11. Darkly.
12. Face-to-face.
13. Even as we are known.
14. D. In the born-again spirit of a person.

# **All Things New**

## *Lesson 2 – Scriptures*

**“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation” (2 Cor. 5:17-18).**

**“For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality” (1 Cor. 15:53).**

**“Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory” (Eph. 1:14).**

**“But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe to the saving of the soul” (Heb. 10:39).**

**“Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls” (James 1:21).**

**“Let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins” (James 5:20).**

**“Receiving the end of your faith, even the salvation of your souls” (1 Pet. 1:9).**

**“For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known” (1 Cor. 13:9-12).**

# The Pivot Point

## Lesson 3

.....

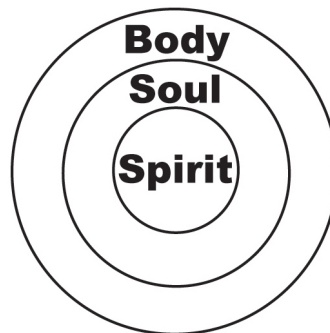
After being born again, the rest of your Christian life consists simply of renewing and releasing! As you renew your mind and believe God's Word, your soul will agree with what's already transpired in your spirit. When your soul comes into alignment with what it sees in God's spiritual mirror, what's already in your spirit releases into your soul and body. That's how you experience the benefits of your salvation!

If your spirit and soul agree, you experience the life of God. Your born-again spirit is always for God because it's already been completely changed into His likeness and image. When your soul agrees with your spirit, that's two parts of your being against one. Since the majority always rules, your soul and body will experience the life, victory, and power that is in your spirit.

On the other hand, the supernatural flow of life from your spirit to the physical realm stops when your soul agrees with your body (majority rules again) and is dominated by the natural realm. You cut yourself off from experiencing God's life in you when you align your soul with what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel instead of what you perceive in the Word. What's in your spirit must flow through your soul in order to get out to your body and the physical world around it!

### *The Real You*

Take a look at the functional diagrams I've included here. I call them "functional" because there's no inspiration or reality to the fact that I've depicted spirit, soul, and body as circles. None of us are circles, even though some people are rounder than others! These diagrams are just an effort to communicate with you the relationship between spirit, soul, and body by means of illustration.



Consider this first diagram of three circles (appears like a target). The outer circle is your body. It's the part you can see and feel. Then you have an inner part that can't be seen but can be felt. That's your soul. Notice how your soul touches both your body and spirit. Your spirit is a second inner part. Although it's the center of who you are, it can't be seen or felt.

Most people don't recognize the fact that their spirits are the core of their being. They function primarily out of the soulish part of them, believing what they think and feel is reality. They may perceive their souls to be the core of who they are, but God's Word says differently. Your spirit is the real you!

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (James 2:26).**

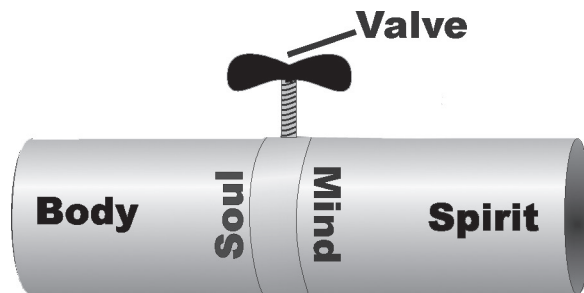
After God formed Adam, He breathed into him the breath of life (Gen. 2:7). This Hebrew word for “breath” is also rendered “spirit” in other places (e.g., Job 26:4 and Prov. 20:27). Adam's body and soul (physical, mental, and emotional part) had no life in them until “spirit” was imparted. Your spirit is your life-giving part (John 6:63).

Since your life comes from your spirit, it's the innermost circle of the three. Notice also how your spirit is completely surrounded by your soul. It has no direct access to your physical body. The diagram of three rings also illustrates this lack of a direct link. That's why everything that comes out from your spirit to your body must go through your mental, emotional part.



*Is Your Valve Open?*

With the pipe diagram below, one side represents your spirit and the other your body. Your soul acts as a valve in between the two. When you open the valve, what's in your spirit can flow through to your body. Depending upon how open it is, the flow of life could be just a trickle, a small stream, or rivers (John 7:38). When the valve is closed, the flow from spirit to body shuts off. That's a great illustration of how a born-again believer functions!



In your spirit, you've got the same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead (Eph. 1:18-20). However, it's possible to have this power and never manifest it. If your soul, like a valve, stays closed to this truth, you won't experience it. Without opening the valve by renewing your mind to God's Word, the eternal reality in your spirit won't be able to impact the temporal "reality" of your physical realm. All that resurrection life and power just stays locked up inside until you look into the spiritual mirror long enough to see the real you and release it.

You could actually die with all of the power that raised Jesus from the dead sitting untapped within you. It would be like dying of thirst while leaning against a well full of life-giving water! If you're dominated by what you feel, your soul is agreeing with the natural realm. "I feel sick and my body hurts. The doctor said I'm dying. Here's my medical record to prove it!" Even though you have the resurrection life of God in your spirit, your soul can keep it shut off so that not one drop of life-giving power ever touches your physical body.

You can experience depression, anger, and bitterness, all the while possessing God's love, joy, and peace in your spirit (Gal. 5:22). Since this applies to every area of your life, can you see how pivotal your soul is?

Your body doesn't really control anything. It just goes with the flow of what it sees, tastes, hears, smells, and feels unless otherwise influenced by the soul. It's amoral—neither good nor bad. Left to itself, your body just reacts to and goes along with what's happening in the physical realm.

When your soul agrees with your spirit, the life of God in you will manifest itself in your physical body. You'll experience healing, deliverance, anointing, victory, power, joy, prosperity—on and on it goes!

# The Pivot Point

## Lesson 3 – Outline

1. After being born again, the rest of your Christian life consists simply of renewing and releasing.
  - A. As you renew your mind and believe God's Word, your soul will agree with what's already transpired in your spirit.
  - B. When your spirit and soul agree, you release and experience the life of God.
  - C. When your body and soul agree, you cut off the supernatural flow of life from your spirit.
  - D. What's in your born-again spirit must flow through your soul in order to get out to your body and the physical world around it.
2. The diagram of three circles (appears like a target).



- A. The outer circle is your body. It's the part you can see and feel.
  - B. The inner circle is your soul. It can't be seen, but can be felt. Also, it touches both your body and your spirit.
  - C. The innermost circle is your spirit. Although it's the center of who you are, it can't be seen or felt. It's completely surrounded by your soul.
3. Your spirit is the core of your being, the real you, your life-giving part.

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (James 2:26).**

**“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7).**

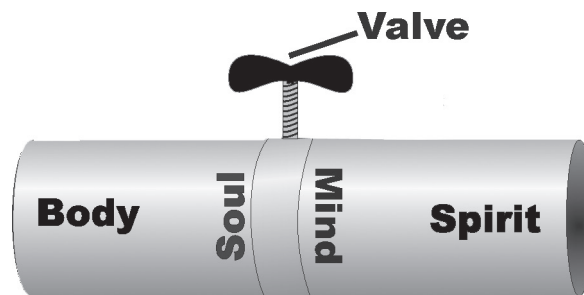


4. The diagram of three rings.



- A. Your spirit has no direct access to your physical body.
- B. Everything that comes out from your spirit to your body must go through your mental, emotional part.

5. The pipe diagram.

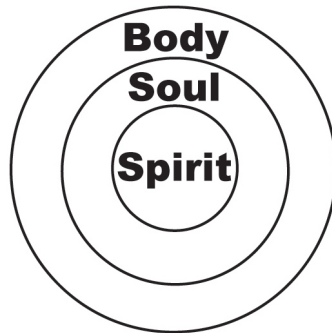


- A. Your soul acts as a valve in between your spirit and your body.
- B. The flow of God's supernatural life from your spirit to your body (natural realm) depends on how open your soul is.
- C. Can you see how pivotal your soul is?

# The Pivot Point

## Lesson 3 – Teacher’s Guide

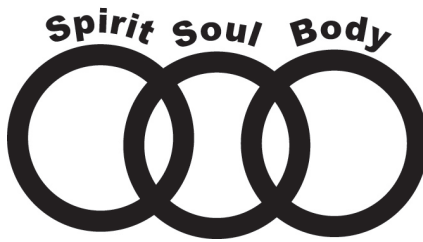
1. After being born again, the rest of the Christian life consists simply of renewing and releasing. As we renew our minds and believe God’s Word, our souls will agree with what’s already transpired in our spirits. When our spirits and souls agree, we release and experience the life of God. When our bodies and souls agree, we cut off the supernatural flow of life from our spirits. What’s in our born-again spirits must flow through our souls in order to get out to our bodies and the physical world around them.
2. Consider this diagram of three circles (appears like a target).



The outer circle represents our bodies. It’s the part we can see and feel. The inner circle represents our souls. The soul can’t be seen, but it can be felt. Also, it touches both one’s body and spirit. The innermost circle represents the spirit. Although the spirit is the center of who we are, it can’t be seen or felt. It’s completely surrounded by the soul.

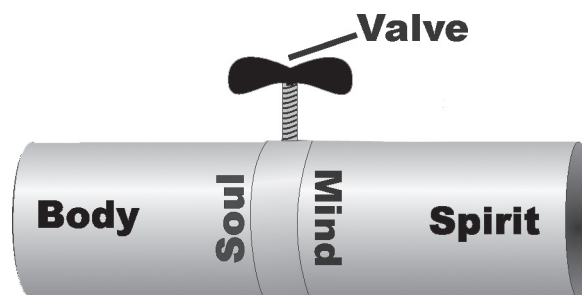
3. Your spirit is the core of your being, “the real you,” your life-giving part (James 2:26 and Gen. 2:7).
1. A. Once we’re born again, what does the Christian life consist of? (Renewing and releasing)  
B. What must we renew? (Our minds)  
C. What must we renew our minds to? (God’s Word)  
D. What must happen in order for us to release and experience the life of God within? (Our spirits and souls must agree)  
E. What happens when our bodies and souls agree? (We cut off the supernatural flow of life from our born-again spirits)  
F. What part of our beings must the life of God flow through in order to get out to our bodies and the physical world around us? (Our souls)
  2. Diagram of three circles (appears like a target).  
A. According to the diagram, which part(s) can be seen? (Body)  
B. Which part(s) can be felt? (Body and soul)  
C. Which part(s) does the soul touch? (Body and spirit)  
D. Which part is completely surrounded by the soul? (Spirit)  
E. Can our spirits be seen or felt? (No)
  3. A. Which part is the core of our being? (Our spirits)  
B. What does James 2:26 tell us about the relationship between the body and spirit? (Without a spirit, our bodies are dead)  
C. Read Genesis 2:7. The Hebrew word translated “breath” is also rendered “spirit” in other verses (e.g., Job 26:4 and Prov. 20:27). What does Genesis 2:7 tell us about our spirits? (Adam’s body and soul—physical, mental, and emotional parts—had no life in them until “spirit” was imparted. Our spirits are our life-giving part)

4. Notice the diagram of three rings.



Our spirits have no direct access to our physical bodies. Everything that comes out from our spirits to our bodies must go through our mental, emotional part.

5. Notice the pipe diagram.



Our souls act as a valve in between our spirits and our bodies. The flow of God's supernatural life from our spirits to our bodies (natural realm) depends on how open our souls are. Without opening the valve by renewing our minds to God's Word, the eternal reality in our spirits won't be able to impact the temporal "reality" of our physical realm. All that resurrection life and power just stays locked up inside until we look into the spiritual mirror long enough to see the real us and release it. We could experience depression, anger, and sickness, all the while possessing God's love, joy, peace, and healing in our spirits (Gal. 5:22).

4. Diagram of three rings.
- A. According to the diagram, do our spirits have any direct access to our physical bodies? (No)
  - B. In order to come out from our spirits to our bodies, what part must everything go through? (Our mental, emotional part, or our souls)
5. Pipe diagram.
- A. What do our souls act like between our spirits and our bodies? (A valve)
  - B. How do we open this "valve" so that the eternal reality in our spirits will be able to impact the temporal "reality" of our physical realm? (By renewing our minds to God's Word)
  - C. Is it possible to have the resurrection life and power of God on the inside of us and never experience it? (Yes)
  - D. Can you see how pivotal your soul is? (Yes!)

# **The Pivot Point**

## *Lesson 3 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to James 2:26, what is the body without the spirit?
2. What is faith without corresponding works?
3. Read Genesis 2:7. What did the LORD God form man out of?
4. What did God do next?
5. What part of our beings is this?
6. Once God did this, what happened?
7. According to Job 33:4, who did Job say made him?
8. What gave him life?
9. What do 2 Samuel 23:2, Job 26:4, and John 6:63 have in common?
10. Read Proverbs 20:27. What is the candle of the LORD?
11. Where does it search?
12. According to John 7:38-39, where is the seat of our born-again spirits?
13. What did Jesus say is the requirement for this living water to flow?
14. At what level did the Lord say this living water should flow: a trickle, a stream, or rivers?
15. According to Ephesians 1:18-20, what power do we have in our born-again spirits?
16. Read Galatians 5:22-23. What is the fruit of the Spirit?
17. Where does this fruit stem from?

# The Pivot Point

## *Lesson 3 – Answer Key*

1. Dead.
2. Dead.
3. The dust of the ground.
4. He breathed into his nostrils the breath of life.
5. Our spirits.
6. Man became a living soul.
7. The Spirit of God.
8. The breath of the Almighty.
9. A. Spirit  
B. God's Word
10. Our spirits.
11. All the inward parts of the belly.
12. Our bellies.
13. Believe on Him.
14. Rivers.
15. The same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead.
16. Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance.
17. The Spirit.

# **The Pivot Point**

## *Lesson 3 – Scriptures*

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (James 2:26).**

**“And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7).**

**“To whom hast thou uttered words? and whose spirit came from thee?” (Job 26:4).**

**“The spirit of man is the candle of the LORD, searching all the inward parts of the belly” (Prov. 20:27).**

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing; the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

**“He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)” (John 7:38-39).**

**“The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places” (Eph. 1:18-20).**

**“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law” (Gal. 5:22-23).**

**“The Spirit of God hath made me, and the breath of the Almighty hath given me life” (Job 33:4).**

**“The Spirit of the LORD spake by me, and his word was in my tongue” (2 Sam. 23:2).**

# Renew, Acknowledge & Experience

## Lesson 4

.....

Since most Christians don't have a working knowledge of spirit, soul, and body, they're dominated by what they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel instead of God's Word. The flow of life within stays turned off because they don't believe anything they can't see. Neither do they understand the change that occurred in their born-again spirits, nor are they fully aware of who they are in Christ. To them, something's just not "real" if it can't be perceived through their five natural senses. Attempting to be "honest," they search their physical, emotional, and mental realms for God's power. If they can't perceive it, then they must not have it.

However, the truth is that old things passed away and all things became new in your spirit the moment you were born again. Now, everything you'll ever need in your Christian life is already there. Just renew your mind and release it!

This truth revolutionized my life. I had experienced God's power and reality, but when the emotion wore off, I thought they were gone. I knew God and that everything He promised was real, but I thought I had to try to get Him to give me things. Due to my wrong thinking, I went through a period of discouragement, frustration, and desperation—not from sin but from a sincere desire to live for Him and experience His best. I felt like no matter how hard I tried, I could never get there. Then I started to see that God had already given me everything in my born-again spirit. As this revelation dawned on me, I realized that I just needed to release it. This simple understanding changed everything!

Since then, I've recognized that the Christian life isn't a process of "getting from God." Instead, it's a process of renewing my mind and learning to release what I've already received. It's much easier to release something I've already got than to go get something I don't yet have.

This erroneous concept of trying to get something you don't yet have carries within it an element of doubt. You see a promise in the Word concerning healing, joy, victory, power, provision, or whatever, and since you know God loves His children and keeps His promises, you start heading toward that, "believing God." You know it's possible—even promised—but since you can't perceive it yet in your mental, emotional, or physical realms, you don't believe it's already been done. In your mind, God's promise isn't a "reality" until you physically have it.

However, the truth is that God placed everything you'll ever need inside your born-again spirit. Once you believe you've already got it, doubt is eliminated! You aren't trying to get saved; you were saved! You aren't in the process of being born again; you were born again! When you confessed Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior, your spirit instantly changed. In your spirit, you are brand new and complete. God has already given you everything you need. The rest of your Christian life isn't learning how to get from Him, but rather discovering how to release what He's already placed within!

## *How Faith Becomes Productive*

Paul prayed this for his friend:

**“That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus” (Philem. 6).**

To communicate means to release or transfer. For instance, I’m communicating, releasing, transferring to you what God has spoken and made a reality in my life. “Effectual” means it begins to work or produce. How does your faith work and produce? “By the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus.”

Old Testament principles don’t necessarily apply to New Testament faith. That’s why concepts like “getting more faith,” “receiving a new anointing,” “getting more of God,” and “receiving a double portion” don’t work. Out of ignorance, people say, “Elisha had a double portion of Elijah’s anointing. Tonight is double-portion night! Come up here and we’ll pray for you to receive twice as much anointing.” Elijah didn’t have the fullness of God; he only had a small part. Therefore, Elisha could have twice as much as Elijah.

However, John 1:16 reveals this:

**“And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.”**

Under the New Covenant, we have all received (past tense) His fullness!

As a believer, God gave you everything when you were born again. Old things passed away and all things became new. In your spirit, you received the same measure of faith, the same power, the same wisdom, and the same ability as every other Christian. Our spirits are all identical to the Lord Jesus Christ in every way. Your spirit isn’t in the process of growing and maturing, because it’s already complete; you’ve already got everything!

The rest of your Christian life is learning how to manifest in the physical realm what’s already in your born-again spirit. The way your faith becomes effective, productive, and operative is by acknowledging every good thing in you (your spirit) in Christ. Since you can only acknowledge things that already exist, you can’t acknowledge something that’s not a reality. Therefore, in order for your faith to work, you must recognize, believe, and acknowledge the good things in you in Christ!

### *One-Third Complete*

I didn’t see any manifestation of power, victory, joy—anything—until I started renewing my mind and discovering what God had put inside me. As I began acknowledging what He had already done, His presence and power started manifesting in my life. The lives of the people I ministered to began to change. Acknowledging the good things in me in Christ caused my faith to work, and it produced supernatural results!



Most Christians believe God can do anything, but they experience very little. Now that they've been born again, they know they have access to the Lord. They believe that God can release His power in answer to prayer, but whether something comes to pass or not depends on their performance (i.e., being holy, speaking right, studying the Word, tithing, avoiding strife, etc.). This view short-circuits God's power because their focus is on what they need to do instead of what Christ has already done. It's not His power these Christians doubt but rather His willingness to use it on their behalf. They think God's power is out there somewhere and that they must do things in order to obtain it!

The truth is, when you were born again, God put His power, anointing, victory, joy, peace—everything—in you in abundance. The only reason they don't manifest in your soul and body is your unrenewed mind. It's not that God didn't give it but that you're still looking at the physical realm instead of His spiritual mirror.

One-third of your salvation is already complete! Right now, your spirit is as saved, sanctified, holy, and empowered as it will ever be throughout all eternity. Someday you'll receive a new body and a new soul to match up with your new spirit. Until then, it's your soul and body that are in the process of change, not your spirit. At the Second Coming of Christ, or when you die and go to Him, the change in your soul will be instantly completed. Then when the Lord returns, your spirit and soul will be reunited with your glorified body. At that time, all three will be perfect. But until then, the Christian life is renewing your mind and acknowledging the perfection already in your spirit so that your soul and physical body can experience the benefits of salvation.

### *Conformed or Transformed—You Choose!*

**“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God” (Rom. 12:1-2).**

Don't be conformed to this world! To be conformed means to be poured into the mold of. In life, you will encounter pressures—from the world, from the devil, from unbelievers, and from circumstances. Although you can't avoid being melted, you can choose which mold you'll be poured into. When pressures come, will you become bitter or better? As fiery trials arise, will you stand victorious or give in to defeat? The choice is yours, but you will be changed!

Be transformed by the renewing of your mind! “Transformed” in the Greek is the same word we derive “metamorphosis” from. It's the picture of a little worm spinning a cocoon and then coming out as a butterfly. The way you transform, change, and metamorphose from being bitter, hurtful, sick, and defeated into the loving, healed, healthy, and victorious person God created you to be is through renewing your mind. Your spirit is already changed, and your body is basically your soul's caboose. Whatever you think in your soul, your body will just go along for the ride. Therefore, it's your mind, your thoughts, and your attitude that determine whether you experience victory and the life of God in your spirit or the defeat and death of the fallen natural realm. Renewing your mind to the Word facilitates your transformation.

God's Word tells you what is spiritually true. It gives you the new values and attitudes you should conform yourself to. As you continually look into the Lord's spiritual mirror, you'll begin to see and experience yourself for who you really are.

# Renew, Acknowledge & Experience

## *Lesson 4 – Outline*

1. Most Christians are dominated by what they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel instead of God's Word.
  - A. The flow of life within stays turned off because they don't believe anything they can't see.
  - B. They don't understand the change that happened in their born-again spirits or who they are in Christ.
  - C. To them, something's just not "real" if it can't be perceived through their five natural senses.
2. The Christian life isn't a process of "getting from God"; it's a process of renewing your mind and learning to release what you've already received.
  - A. It's much easier to release something you've already got than to go get something you don't yet have.
  - B. Doubt is eliminated once you believe you've already got it.
3. Your faith becomes effective, productive, and operative by acknowledging every good thing in you (your spirit) in Christ.

**"That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus" (Philem. 6).**

- A. To communicate means to release or transfer.
  - B. "Effectual" means it begins to work or produce.
4. Under the New Covenant, we have all received (past tense) His fullness.

**"And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace" (John 1:16).**

- A. God gave you everything when you were born again.
- B. Old Testament principles don't necessarily apply to New Testament faith.
- C. The rest of your Christian life is learning how to manifest in the physical realm what's already in your born-again spirit.

5. Most Christians believe God can do anything, but they experience very little.
  - A. They focus on what they need to do instead of what Christ has already done.
  - B. They don't doubt God's power, but His willingness to use it on their behalf.
  - C. They think His power is out there somewhere and that they must do things in order to obtain it.
6. When you were born again, God put His power, anointing, victory, joy, peace—everything—in you in abundance.
  - A. The only reason they don't manifest is your unrenewed mind.
  - B. God already gave, but you're still looking at the physical realm instead of His spiritual mirror.
  - C. Until the Second Coming of Christ, or when you die and go to Him, the Christian life is renewing your mind and acknowledging the perfection already in your spirit so that your soul and physical body can experience the benefits of salvation.
7. Don't be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind.

**“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God” (Rom. 12:1-2).**

- A. To be conformed means to be poured into the mold of.
  - B. You can't avoid being melted, but you can choose which mold you'll be poured into.
  - C. “Transformed” is the picture of a worm metamorphosing into a butterfly.
  - D. Your mind, thoughts, and attitudes determine whether you experience victory and the life of God in your spirit, or the defeat and death of the fallen natural realm.
8. Renewing your mind to the Word facilitates your transformation.
    - A. God's Word gives you the new values and attitudes you should conform yourself to.
    - B. As you continually look into the Lord's spiritual mirror, you'll begin to see and experience yourself for who you really are.

# Renew, Acknowledge & Experience

## *Lesson 4 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Most Christians are dominated by what they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel instead of God’s Word. The flow of life within stays turned off because they don’t believe anything they can’t see. They don’t understand the change that happened in their born-again spirits or who they are in Christ. To them, something’s just not “real” if it can’t be perceived though their five natural senses.

However, the truth is, everything we’ll ever need in our Christian lives is already there in our born-again spirits.

2. The Christian life isn’t a process of “getting from God”; it’s a process of renewing your mind and learning to release what you’ve already received. It’s much easier to release something you’ve already got than to go get something you don’t yet have. Doubt is eliminated once you believe you’ve already got it. God has already given you everything you need.
3. Our faith becomes effective, productive, and operative by acknowledging every good thing in us (our spirits) in Christ (Philem. 6).
4. Under the New Covenant, we have all received (past tense) His fullness (John 1:16). God gave us everything when we were born again. Old Testament principles don’t necessarily apply to New Testament faith. The rest of our Christian lives is learning how to manifest in the physical realm what’s already in our born-again spirits.

1. What are most Christians dominated by instead of God’s Word? (What they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel)
2. A. Is the Christian life a process of “getting from God” or of renewing our minds and learning to release what we’ve already received? (Renewing our minds and learning to release what we’ve already received)  
B. What is eliminated once you believe you’ve already got it? (Doubt)
3. A. Read Philemon 6. How does our faith become effectual? (By the acknowledgment of every good thing that is in us in Christ Jesus)  
B. Where are these good things? (In us in Christ Jesus)  
C. Which part of us—body, soul, or spirit—is in Christ? (Our spirits)
4. A. According to John 1:16, have we all received (past tense), are we all receiving (present tense), or will we all receive (future tense) Christ’s fullness? (We have all received—past tense)  
B. This means that God gave us nothing, some things, most things, or everything when we were born again? (Everything)

5. Most Christians believe God can do anything, but they experience very little. They focus on what they need to do instead of what Christ has already done. They don't doubt God's power, but His willingness to use it on their behalf. They think His power is out there somewhere and that they must do things in order to obtain it.
6. When we were born again, God put His power, anointing, victory, joy, peace—everything—in us in abundance. The only reason they don't manifest is our unrenewed minds. God already gave, but we're still looking at the physical realm instead of His spiritual mirror. Until the Second Coming of Christ, or when we die and go to Him, the Christian life is renewing our minds and acknowledging the perfection already in our spirits so that our souls and physical bodies can experience the benefits of salvation.
7. We are not to be conformed to this world but to be transformed by the renewing of our minds (Rom. 12:1-2). To be conformed means to be poured into the mold of. We can't avoid being melted, but we can choose which mold we'll be poured into. "Transformed" is the picture of a worm metamorphosing into a butterfly. Our minds, thoughts, and attitudes determine whether we experience victory and the life of God in our spirits, or the defeat and death of the fallen natural realm.
8. Renewing our minds to the Word facilitates our transformation. God's Word gives us the new values and attitudes we should conform ourselves to. As we continually look into the Lord's spiritual mirror, we'll begin to see and experience ourselves for who we really are.

5. A. As Christians, should we focus on what we need to do? (No)  
B. What, then, should we focus on? (What Christ has already done)
6. What is the only reason why what Jesus has already put in us isn't manifest? (Our unrenewed minds)
7. A. Read Romans 12:1-2. What should we present to God as a living sacrifice? (Our bodies)  
B. How do we do that? (By not being conformed to this world but being transformed by the renewing of our minds)
8. What is it that God wants us to renew our minds to? (His Word)

# Renew, Acknowledge & Experience

## *Lesson 4 – Additional Information*

My wife and I went through a period of extreme poverty when we were just starting out in full-time ministry. After coming home from Vietnam and getting married, I pastored a small church in Seagoville, Texas. Every penny we had went toward paying the bills. We were so poor that sometimes we even went without food for a week or two!

During this time, my Bible kept falling apart. The pages had mildewed from Vietnam's humidity, and I'd written on them quite a bit. Despite my efforts to tape it together, entire chapters—even books—were gone. There I was, pastoring a church with a beat-up, incomplete Bible!

Since we didn't have the money available to just go buy a new one, I decided to make an issue out of it. How could I believe God to minister salvation, heal the sick, cast out devils, and change people's lives if I couldn't believe Him to supply me with enough extra money to purchase a Bible? I drew my line in the sand and declared, "I'm going to win this fight or die trying!"

The devil took me up on it, and the battle raged. Thoughts of fear and unbelief bombarded my mind. *Some man of God you are! You don't even have a whole Bible. You can't even believe God for a book! Some pastor you are—failure!* I fought those thoughts constantly for six whole months!

Finally, I got the money and bought my new Bible. After having my name engraved on it, I victoriously paraded out of that bookstore carrying my trophy under my arm. All those negative thoughts left instantly. Once I had it, I never again doubted that I'd get my Bible!

You may say, "Of course not, Andrew; you already had it. Why would you doubt something you've already got?" My point exactly! Doubt is eliminated when you know you've already got it.

For a more in-depth look at these truths, I recommend my teaching entitled *You've Already Got It!* It's a great follow-up to *Spirit, Soul & Body*.

# Renew, Acknowledge & Experience

## *Lesson 4 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Read Philemon 6. What is being communicated?
2. How does your faith become effectual?
3. Can you acknowledge something that isn't really there?
4. According to this verse, are the things in you in Christ Jesus good or bad?
5. According to John 1:16, whose fullness have we received?
6. Who has received?
7. When did we receive this fullness?
8. According to Romans 12:1-2, we are to present our bodies as what?
9. This living sacrifice is what?
  - A. Holy.
  - B. Acceptable unto God.
  - C. Your reasonable service.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
10. What are we NOT to be conformed to?
11. We are \_\_\_\_\_ by the \_\_\_\_\_ of our minds.
12. How is God's will described?
  - A. Bad, unacceptable, and imperfect.
  - B. Good, acceptable, and perfect.
  - C. Boring, sickly, and destructive.



13. As your mind becomes more and more renewed to the Word of God, you will experience His will \_\_\_\_\_.
- A. More.
  - B. Less.
  - C. The same.

# **Renew, Acknowledge & Experience**

## *Lesson 4 – Answer Key*

1. Your faith.
2. By the acknowledging of every good thing that is in you in Christ.
3. No.
4. Good.
5. Christ's.
6. All believers.
7. The very moment we were born again.
8. A living sacrifice.
9. D. All of the above
10. This world.
11. Transformed, renewing.
12. B. Good, acceptable, and perfect.
13. A. More.

# **Renew, Acknowledge & Experience**

## *Lesson 4 – Scriptures*

**“That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus” (Philem. 6).**

**“And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace” (John 1:16).**

**“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God” (Rom. 12:1-2).**



# Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?

## Lesson 5



**“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace” (Rom. 8:6).**

Carnal-mindedness doesn't necessarily mean sinful-mindedness. All sin is carnal, but not all carnality is sin. “Carnal” means “sensual,” or of the five senses. Carnal-mindedness is allowing your mind to be dominated by what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. You are carnally minded when your thoughts center primarily on the physical realm.

Even in the natural, you've learned to believe in things you can't see. Radio and television signals constantly surround you. Microwaves heat your food. Because of germs, you wash your hands, whether they look dirty or not. Although these physical things can't be seen, you're still very aware of their presence in your life.

However, there's also an entire spiritual world—including realities within you—that exists beyond your natural perception. Your brain and five senses can't perceive it, but your soul can through God's Word. By faith, you can believe things that can't physically be seen!

### *Let Peace Flow!*

Spiritual-mindedness releases the flow of God's life in you, but carnal-mindedness shuts it off. Simply stated, carnal-mindedness = death, and spiritual-mindedness = life and peace (Rom. 8:6).

“Death” refers to anything that's a result of sin. This isn't limited only to the ultimate physical death of your body, but includes all of death's progressive effects as well (i.e., sadness, loneliness, bitterness, illness, anger, poverty, etc.). In this fallen world, being dominated by your natural senses produces death.

But spiritual-mindedness produces life and peace. Jesus declared:

**“The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63b).**

When your thoughts are dominated by what the Word says, you're spiritually minded.

It doesn't matter what your physical circumstances might be. God can keep you in perfect peace!

**“Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee” (Is. 26:3).**

As your mind stays on Him, your soul agrees with your spirit, and God's peace is released into your soul and body. Your born-again spirit is always in perfect peace. It's just a matter of drawing it out!

On the other hand, you won't experience the peace within when your mind stays fixed on your problems. Peace—an emotion—is linked to the way you think! Your lack of peace isn't because of any circumstance or person; it's just that you've allowed your mind to be dominated by what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. You're busy thinking about the potential damage, considering what the problem has done to others, and hashing through their opinions on the subject. All the while, God's peace has been present in your spirit, but you haven't drawn it out. Open that closed valve and let peace flow!

### *Alienated Through Ignorance*

Believers shouldn't live like lost people who are trapped in their carnal, physical world.

**“This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind”** (Eph. 4:17).

In context, a Gentile was a non-Jew, someone not in covenant relationship with God. In other words, unbelievers don't use their minds to perceive spiritual truth.

**“Having the understanding darkened”** (Eph. 4:18a).

If you don't renew your mind and use it to study and meditate God's Word, it will automatically gravitate toward what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. This darkens your understanding.

Understanding is the application of knowledge. Knowledge puts food into your mouth and chews. Understanding actually swallows and digests it so that the beneficial nutrients can be released into your body.

The knowledge of God is critical, but it must be understood to be useful. Without understanding, you can't release the life that's in it.

When a Christian walks like an unbeliever, they get the same results—death. Believers who don't understand and apply the knowledge of God in their lives gravitate toward carnal-mindedness. Without spiritual knowledge and understanding, your mind can't be renewed, and the life of God in your spirit can't be released. That's why understanding this revelation of spirit, soul, and body is the first step toward walking in life and peace!

When a believer's understanding is darkened, they are:

**“Alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart”** (Eph. 4:18b).

In other words, the life of God is still there, but they are alienated from it due to ignorance, which refers to the mind. This is where most Christians live their lives—separated from the life of God within due to their own ignorance of spiritual truth.

In His Word, God declares that by His stripes, you were healed (1 Pet. 2:24). You look at yourself and ask, “Is that cancerous tumor gone?” Still feeling pain, emotionally drained, and fearful, you continue, “God says I’m healed, but I’m not. It’s still there, so I must not be healed.” By adopting that attitude, you’ve allowed your five senses to dominate you more than God’s Word. The same power that raised Jesus from the dead is in you, but you didn’t believe it (Eph. 1:18-20). You let your mind be controlled by what it saw in the physical realm more than by the spiritual realm. Therefore, even though you have the resurrection life of God in your spirit, it won’t manifest in the physical realm because you’re carnally minded, which equals death.

### ***Engine or Caboose?***

Lasciviousness is being controlled by what you feel.

**“Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness” (Eph. 4:19).**

There is a godly type of feeling. You don’t just deny that your senses exist. However, most people have gone beyond simply receiving sensory input to being dominated by it. They’ve left what God intended feelings to be and entered into lasciviousness—where feelings run their lives.

Feelings should be the caboose, not the engine. They were designed to follow what you think, not lead the way. When you let the caboose act like the engine in your life, you’ll find yourself either going nowhere or heading straight for a train wreck. For a believer, this should not be!

# Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?

## *Lesson 5 – Outline*

1. Carnal-mindedness is allowing your mind to be dominated by what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.

**“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** (Rom. 8:6).

- A. “Carnal” means “sensual,” or of the five senses.
  - B. Carnal-mindedness doesn’t necessarily mean sinful-mindedness.
  - C. You are carnally minded when your thoughts center primarily on the physical realm.
2. Spiritual-mindedness releases the flow of God’s life in you, but carnal-mindedness shuts it off.
    - A. Carnal-mindedness = death, and spiritual-mindedness = life and peace.
    - B. “Death” refers to anything that’s a result of sin.
    - C. In this fallen world, being dominated by your natural senses produces death.

3. When your thoughts are dominated by what the Word says, you’re spiritually minded.

**“The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life”** (John 6:63b).

- A. It doesn’t matter what your physical circumstances may be. God can keep you in perfect peace.

**“Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee”** (Is. 26:3).

- B. As your mind stays on Him, your soul agrees with your spirit, and God’s peace is released into your soul and body.

4. Believers shouldn’t live like lost people who are trapped in their carnal, physical world.

**“This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind”** (Eph. 4:17).

- A. A Gentile was a non-Jew, someone not in covenant relationship with God.
  - B. Unbelievers don’t use their minds to perceive spiritual truth.
5. If you don’t renew your mind and use it to study and meditate God’s Word, it will automatically gravitate toward what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.



**“Having the understanding darkened”** (Eph. 4:18a).

- A. The knowledge of God is critical, but it must be understood to be useful.
  - B. Without understanding, you can't release the life in it.
6. When a Christian walks like an unbeliever, they get the same results—death.
- A. When a believer's understanding is darkened, they are alienated from the life of God within them through ignorance.

**“Alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart”** (Eph. 4:18b).

- B. Most Christians live their lives separated from the life of God within due to their own ignorance of spiritual truth.
7. Lasciviousness is being controlled by what you feel.

**“Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness”** (Eph. 4:19).

- A. Most people have gone beyond simply receiving sensory input to being dominated by it.
- B. Feelings were designed to follow what you think, not lead the way.

# Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?

## *Lesson 5 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Carnal-mindedness is allowing our minds to be dominated by what we can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel (Rom. 8:6). “Carnal” means “sensual,” or of the five senses. Carnal-mindedness doesn’t necessarily mean sinful-mindedness. We are carnally minded when our thoughts center primarily on the physical realm.
2. Spiritual-mindedness releases the flow of God’s life in us, but carnal-mindedness shuts it off. Carnal mindedness = death, and spiritual mindedness = life and peace. “Death” refers to anything that’s a result of sin. In this fallen world, being dominated by our natural senses produces death.
3. When our thoughts are dominated by what the Word says, we’re spiritually minded (John 6:63). It doesn’t matter what our physical circumstances may be. God can keep us in perfect peace (Is. 26:3). As our minds stay on Him, our souls agree with our spirits, and God’s peace is released into our souls and bodies.
4. We, as believers, shouldn’t live like lost people who are trapped in their carnal, physical world (Eph. 4:17). A Gentile was a non-Jew, someone not in covenant relationship with God. Unbelievers don’t use their minds to perceive spiritual truth.

1. A. According to Romans 8:6, what does carnal-mindedness produce? (Death)  
B. What does spiritual-mindedness produce? (Life and peace)  
C. Is sinful-mindedness and carnal-mindedness the same thing? (No)  
D. When are we carnally minded? (When our thoughts center primarily on the physical realm)
2. A. What releases the flow of God’s life in us? (Spiritual-mindedness)  
B. What shuts off the flow of God’s life in us? (Carnal-mindedness)
3. A. Read John 6:63. What are spirit and life? (The words Jesus has spoken to us)  
B. According to Isaiah 26:3, how can we be kept in perfect peace? (By keeping our minds stayed on God)  
C. As our minds stay on Him, what happens? (Our souls agree with our spirits, and God’s peace is released into our souls and bodies)
4. A. Lost people are trapped in what? (Their carnal, physical world)  
B. According to Ephesians 4:17, do unbelievers use their minds to perceive spiritual truth? (No)

5. If we don't renew our minds and use them to study and meditate on God's Word, they'll automatically gravitate toward what we can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel (Eph. 4:18). The knowledge of God is critical, but it must be understood to be useful. Without understanding, we can't release the life in it.
6. When we walk like unbelievers, we get the same results—death. When our understanding is darkened, we are alienated from the life of God within us through ignorance (Eph. 4:18). Most of us live our lives separated from the life of God within due to our own ignorance of spiritual truth.
7. Lasciviousness is being controlled by what we feel (Eph. 4:19). Most people have gone beyond simply receiving sensory input to being dominated by it. Feelings were designed to follow what we think, not lead the way.

5. Read Ephesians 4:18. The knowledge of God is critical, but in order to be useful, it must be \_\_\_\_\_.  
(Understood)
6. When a believer's understanding is darkened, what happens? (They are alienated from the life of God within them through ignorance)
7. A. What is lasciviousness? (Being controlled by what we feel)  
B. Were feelings designed to lead our thoughts or follow them? (Follow them)

# Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?

## *Lesson 5 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to Romans 8:6, what produces death?
2. What produces life and peace?
3. What does a spiritually minded person think on?
4. What does a carnally minded person think on?
5. Who was speaking in John 6:63?
6. What are spirit and life?
7. According to Isaiah 26:3, who keeps us in perfect peace?
8. In order to do that, what does He first require of us?
9. Ephesians 4:17 states that believers should not \_\_\_\_\_ as other Gentiles (unbelievers) \_\_\_\_\_, in the vanity of their mind.
10. According to Ephesians 4:18, an unbeliever's understanding is \_\_\_\_\_.
11. They are alienated from what?
12. Why?
13. Ephesians 4:19 says that this kind of person is given over to \_\_\_\_\_, which is being dominated by their natural senses and feelings.
14. In this state, they \_\_\_\_\_ all uncleanness with \_\_\_\_\_.
15. Who is the first half of 1 Peter 2:24 speaking about?
16. Who is the second half of 1 Peter 2:24 speaking about?
17. What are we dead to?

18. What should we live unto?
19. How did Jesus heal us?
20. Is this healing past, present, or future tense?

# Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?

## *Lesson 5 – Answer Key*

1. Carnal-mindedness.
2. Spiritual-mindedness.
3. God and His Word.
4. Natural things.
5. Jesus.
6. Jesus' words.
7. God.
8. That we keep our minds stayed on Him, trusting Him.
9. Walk, walk.
10. Darkened.
11. The life of God.
12. Because of the ignorance that is in them and the blindness of their hearts.
13. Lasciviousness.
14. Work, greediness.
15. Jesus Christ.
16. Believers.
17. Sins.

18. Righteousness.

19. By His stripes.

20. Past.

# **Reality—Carnal or Spiritual?**

## *Lesson 5 – Scriptures*

**“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace” (Rom. 8:6).**

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

**“Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee” (Is. 26:3).**

**“This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart: Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness” (Eph. 4:17-19).**

**“Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed” (1 Pet. 2:24).**

**“The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places” (Eph. 1:18-20).**



# Righteous & Holy

## Lesson 6



**“But ye have not so learned Christ; If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness”**

(Eph. 4:20-24).

Renew your mind to the Word, and put on the new man! Ephesians 4:24 plainly reveals that your born-again spirit—the new man—was created after God in righteousness and true holiness. You need to recognize and acknowledge your true self in God’s mirror. Right now in your spirit, you are righteous and holy.

At times you might think, *I’m getting holier*, but in reality, you’re just referring to your actions in the physical realm. The degree of holiness you live outwardly may vary, but the nature of your born-again spirit is righteousness and true holiness.

That’s why you must worship Him in spirit and truth.

**“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:24).

Your spirit is the part of you that completely changed. Old things passed away. All things became new. You cannot approach God unless you come to Him through the righteousness and true holiness of who you are in the spirit.

You aren’t worthy to come into His presence based on the righteousness and holiness of your thoughts and actions. Even at your best, you still fall short of doing everything you should. Even when you’ve been seeking the Lord wholeheartedly, you still have negative and impure thoughts in your mind. No matter how hard you try, you’ll never measure up to God’s perfection through your own efforts in the physical, emotional, and mental realms.

How, then, does God in His holiness fellowship with you if, even at your best, you still fall short of His standards? He communes with you Spirit to spirit. You became a brand-new creature who is now righteous and holy. In your born-again spirit, you’re as pure as Christ is because His righteousness has been given to you.

**“But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption”** (1 Cor. 1:30).

Jesus Himself literally became your righteousness!

### *From Rags to Righteousness!*

It's inaccurate for a New Testament believer to confess, "All of my righteousness is as filthy rags!" (Is. 64:6). You either have to be talking about your own self-righteousness, which you aren't supposed to approach Him with anyway, or be totally ignorant of the fact that you've been made righteous in your spirit with Christ's righteousness. Calling Jesus' righteousness—which you received at salvation—a filthy rag is an affront against God and His Word!

Isaiah 64:6 was valid for the Old Testament because no one was born again; they didn't have new spirits. Regardless of how good they lived in their physical and soulful realms, they still sinned and came short of the glory of God. All of us have come short of the glory of God (Rom. 3:23). But once you became born again, one-third of your being is completely righteous.

Unlike your spirit, your body and soul are in process. Until you're with Jesus in glory, they don't "arrive"—they just leave and head in that direction. Your physical, emotional, and mental realms will always need improvement, but your spirit is complete.

Since God is a Spirit, He looks at you Spirit to spirit (John 4:24). This is why you must worship Him in spirit and truth. You must come before Him in your spirit because it's the only part of you that's been created in righteousness and true holiness. God can only accept you based on who you are in your born-again spirit. That's why the new birth is so essential!

Anyone who hasn't received the Lord but tries to approach Him based on who they are in their actions and thoughts will always fall short of His glory (Rom. 3:23). Even if they have made significant personal improvements, God cannot lower Himself to their level. There's no way they can approach, communicate, or fellowship with God, because of their unholy nature. People's performance simply cannot accomplish what only the new birth can—change their spiritual natures.

### *Fix Your Gaze*

When you were born again, your old spirit died and was instantly removed and replaced (Rom. 6). You became a brand-new creature with a recreated, elevated spirit. God literally sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your heart, crying, "Abba, Father" (Gal. 4:6; Rom. 8:9, and 15). Your spirit and His Spirit intermarried, merged, and became one to create a totally new person. That's why God's mirror reflects you as righteous, holy, and pure. The makeup of your born-again spirit is identical to Jesus Himself!

Fix your gaze on God's mirror! Let your spirit's reflected image dominate your thoughts. As who you are in Christ grows stronger in your heart, carnal "reality" must give way to spiritual reality. That's when you'll experience life and peace!

# Righteous & Holy

## Lesson 6 – Outline

1. Your born-again spirit—the new man—was created after God in righteousness and true holiness.

**“But ye have not so learned Christ; If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness”** (Eph. 4:20-24).

- A. Recognize and acknowledge your true self in God’s mirror.
  - B. The degree of holiness you live outwardly may vary, but the nature of your born-again spirit is righteousness and true holiness.
2. You must worship God in spirit and truth.

**“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:24).

- A. You cannot approach God unless you come to Him through the righteousness and true holiness of who you are in the spirit.
  - B. No matter how hard you try, you’ll never measure up to God’s perfection through your own efforts in the physical, emotional, and mental realms.
3. Jesus Himself literally became your righteousness.

**“But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption”** (1 Cor. 1:30).

- A. Now that you’re born again, one-third of your being is completely righteous.
  - B. Unlike your spirit, your body and soul are in process.
4. God can only accept you based on who you are in your born-again spirit.
- A. Anyone who hasn’t received the Lord but tries to approach Him based on who they are in their actions and thoughts will always fall short of His glory (Rom. 3:23).
  - B. People’s performance simply cannot accomplish what only the new birth can—change their spiritual natures.

5. Fix your gaze on God's mirror.

A. God's mirror reflects you as righteous, holy, and pure.

B. As who you are in Christ grows stronger in your heart, carnal "reality" must give way to spiritual reality.

# Righteous & Holy

## *Lesson 6 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Our born-again spirits—the new man—were created after God in righteousness and true holiness (Eph. 4:20-24). We need to recognize and acknowledge our true selves in God’s mirror. The degree of holiness we live outwardly may vary, but the nature of our born-again spirits is righteousness and true holiness.
2. That’s why we must worship God in spirit and in truth (John 4:24). We cannot approach God unless we come to Him through the righteousness and true holiness of who we are in the spirit. No matter how hard we try, we’ll never measure up to God’s perfection through our own efforts in the physical, emotional, and mental realms.
3. Jesus Himself literally became our righteousness (1 Cor. 1:30). Now that we’re born again, one-third of our beings is completely righteous. Unlike our spirits, our bodies and souls are in process.
4. God can only accept us based on who we are in our born-again spirits. Anyone who hasn’t received the Lord but tries to approach Him based on who they are in their actions and thoughts will always fall short of His glory (Rom. 3:23). People’s performance simply cannot accomplish what only the new birth can—change their spiritual natures. That’s why the new birth is so essential.
5. Let’s fix our gaze on God’s mirror, which reflects us as righteous, holy, and pure. As who we are in Christ grows stronger in our hearts, carnal “reality” must give way to spiritual reality. That’s when we’ll experience life and peace.

1. A. Read Ephesians 4:20-24. How was our new man created? (After God in righteousness and true holiness)  
B. Does the nature of our new man vary? (No)
2. A. John 4:24 says that we must worship God how? (In spirit and in truth)  
B. Can we approach the Lord through who we are in our bodies and souls? (No)  
C. Since God is a Spirit, we must approach Him through who we are \_\_\_\_\_. (In our born-again spirits)
3. A. According to 1 Corinthians 1:30, Jesus became our what? (Righteousness)  
B. Did our souls and bodies join our spirits in becoming completely righteous the moment we were born again? (No)
4. A. What does Romans 3:23 say about the unbeliever who tries to approach the Lord based on who they are in their actions and thoughts? (They come short of the glory of God)  
B. Can a person’s performance change their spiritual nature? (No)
5. A. Where must we go to see ourselves as righteous, holy, and pure? (God’s mirror, which is His Word)  
B. When will we experience life and peace? (When who we are in Christ grows stronger in our hearts than carnal “reality”)

# **Righteous & Holy**

*Lesson 6 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to Ephesians 4:20-24, what are we to put off?
2. What are we to put on?
3. How does verse 23 tell us to do this?
4. According to John 4:24, God is a \_\_\_\_\_.
5. As believers, what part of us is like God?
6. How, then, must we approach Him?
7. Isaiah 64:6 says that we are all as an \_\_\_\_\_ thing, and all our \_\_\_\_\_ are as filthy rags.
8. Is this speaking of an unbeliever or a believer?
9. When a New Testament believer confesses, “All of my righteousness is as filthy rags,” they are:
  - A. Talking about their own self-righteousness, which they aren’t supposed to approach God with anyway.
  - B. Totally ignorant of the truth that they’ve been made righteous in their spirit with Christ’s righteousness.
  - C. Insulting God and His Word.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
10. What does Romans 3:23 say about approaching God based on who we are in our actions and thoughts?
11. According to Galatians 4:6, who has God sent forth into the hearts of His children?
12. From their hearts, what does He cry?
13. According to Romans 8:9, who does the Spirit of God dwell in?
14. Those who have not the Spirit of Christ are \_\_\_\_\_.

# **Righteous & Holy**

## *Lesson 6 – Answer Key*

1. The former conversation (conduct) of the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts.
2. The new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.
3. Be renewed in the spirit of your mind.
4. Spirit.
5. Our born-again spirits.
6. In spirit and in truth. We approach God through the truth of who the Word says we are in the spirit.
7. Unclean, righteousnesses.
8. An unbeliever.
9. D. All of the above.
10. All have sinned and come short of God's glory.
11. The Spirit of His Son.
12. "Abba, Father!"
13. Those who are in the Spirit.
14. None of His.

# Righteous & Holy

## *Lesson 6 – Scriptures*

**“But ye have not so learned Christ; If so be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus: That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness”**  
(Eph. 4:20-24).

**“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:24).

**“But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption”** (1 Cor. 1:30).

**“But we are all as an unclean thing, and all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our iniquities, like the wind, have taken us away”** (Is. 64:6).

**“For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God”** (Rom. 3:23).

**“And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father”** (Gal. 4:6).

**“But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any many have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his”** (Rom. 8:9).

**“For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father”** (Rom. 8:15).



# One with Jesus

## Lesson 7



As Jesus is, so are you—right now—in this world!

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: *because as he is, so are we in this world*”** (1 John 4:17, emphasis mine).

Notice how it’s this world, not the next. The Word says now, presently, here on earth. It’s not talking about heaven in the future. As Jesus is, so *are* you!

If you only look in your physical and soulish part to see if you’re like Jesus, you’ll conclude, “The Bible is so hard to understand!” You see zits, baldness, wrinkles, bulges, and all kinds of other physical imperfections that you know Jesus doesn’t have. In your emotional realm, there’s depression, discouragement, anger, bitterness, and very little of God’s kind of love. In light of these contrary facts, you could wonder, *How can I be as Jesus is?*

But now that you’re beginning to grasp spirit, soul, and body, you know 1 John 4:17 must be speaking of your spirit. The born-again part of you is the only feasible explanation for “as Jesus is right now, so are you in this world.” It’s not your body, nor your soul, but your spirit that’s as Jesus is. What an awesome truth!

However, very few Christians truly believe this reality! Since the spirit can’t be physically seen or emotionally felt, carnal facts consistently win over spiritual truth. Without looking at themselves in God’s spiritual mirror, they just submit to what they see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. Most Christians remain carnally minded and experience its deadly effects instead of choosing to be spiritually minded and enjoying life and peace!

### ***Hitting Pay Dirt***

If you believed that you are, in your spirit, just as Jesus is right now in heaven—in all of His glory, power, and perfection—your life would be revolutionized! However, believing is just the first step. You must also learn how to release this reality from within. Just thinking this awesome thought once won’t instantaneously change everything in your life. It’s a process. As the seed of this truth becomes firmly rooted and established in your mind, a process of understanding, growing, and maturing begins in your soulish realm. Then, over time, you’ll see radical changes manifest as you continue believing this truth and continue releasing God’s corresponding power from within your born-again spirit.

What would you do if I told you there was a million dollars hidden in your front yard? It’s buried (so you can’t see or feel it), but it’s there! Since nothing in the yard reflects this truth, all you’d have to go on is my word and your sense knowledge. Which would you believe?

If you trusted what you can see and feel more than my word, you'd miss out on the treasure. Why? You wouldn't pursue it. That money would stay buried and you'd hardly ever think about it. Sure, someone might bring it up in conversation once in a while, but you wouldn't care. In fact, you could live in abject poverty just a few feet away from this abundant wealth hidden right there on your property. It could be that close, and you'd never benefit from it. Unless you believed my word, you'd do without the treasure!

However, if you trusted my word, you'd start digging. Although believing is an important step, it's just the first. You have to dig, find the money, and then bring it up out of the ground in order to benefit from it. If you had a steam shovel or a backhoe and could take bigger scoops, you'd be able to find the treasure quicker than someone with just a spoon. However, if both believed, both would eventually receive. You might get to it faster than the fellow with the spoon, but if he didn't quit after going the first inch and getting a blister, he'd find the money too!

Even if all you've got is a spiritual spoon, you'll still hit pay dirt if you just keep digging. The more you know and understand of God's Word, the quicker you'll start seeing spiritual riches manifest in your life. But before any of it works, you must acknowledge what's already there. In your spirit, as Jesus is, so are you in this world!

### *Embracing the Truth*

You are one with Jesus Christ right now.

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit”** (1 Cor. 6:17).

The Greek word translated “one” here means “a single (one), to the exclusion of others” (*Vine's Expository Dictionary*). It's much deeper than mere similarity (i.e., being joined together as “one” in purpose); this speaks of complete union. If there are molecules and atoms in the spirit realm, then you are molecule-for-molecule and atom-for-atom identical to Jesus. As He is, so are you in this world. In your spirit, you are completely one with Him.

Many believers don't embrace these radical truths because they can't physically prove them. Trapped by natural perception, they're just too accustomed to being dominated by what they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel to believe that they really do have this kind of spiritual unity with the Lord. Even though it's the truth of God's Word, they simply cannot bring themselves to perceive spiritual reality. It's just too contrary to their physical senses.

But you can believe and experience this truth! You can be transformed by renewing your mind to the point where you prove—manifest to your physical senses—the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God (Rom. 12:1-2). By embracing the Word, you'll be able to see the perfection that's in your spirit start flowing out through your soul and body. It will not only impact you but also those God touches through you. Virtue will flow out of you and heal people just like it did with Jesus!

Since understanding these things, I've seen almost every kind of physical healing manifest (people raised from the dead, cancers healed, blind eyes and deaf ears opened, etc.). I've also seen emotional healing as people were set free from depression, discouragement, and the like. What I'm sharing with you works! It's changed my life and the lives of thousands of others I've ministered to.

I haven't tapped into all of it yet, but I've seen enough to testify. Like you, I'm still in the process of renewing my mind. But every believer has the potential of experiencing what I have and so much more. These truths will change you.

### *I Kept Digging*

If you think that what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel is all there is to reality, you won't be able to walk in all of God's will. You won't experience the power and ability of God within if you can't perceive things beyond your body and soul. If you think that God's power is with Him somewhere out there, eventually you'll become discouraged. It's not that you won't believe God has power, but you'll doubt you can ever attain it. You must believe you are one with Him in spirit and that it's your responsibility to release His power from within in order to see it manifest.

You can't doubt you'll get something that you know you've already got. It's just a matter of releasing what He's placed in you. If you really believe, you'll keep digging until you eventually hit pay dirt and something begins to work!

I didn't understand how faith worked for many years, but just knowing it was there motivated me to keep digging. I began praying and believing for things when there was no natural evidence whatsoever that would lead me to think I could manifest such power. When I prayed for people to be healed, I didn't feel anything in my flesh—no tingle, no burning, nothing. I had no reason to believe God's power would manifest, except that I'd been looking in my spiritual mirror and knew it was in me somewhere.

Not very many were healed at first, because I didn't understand much. But because I laid my hands on so many different people, I started seeing some healed. Power would manifest that was beyond my natural ability. Encouraged, I kept digging. The deeper I dug, the more I'd find. The more I'd find, the quicker and easier it became to dig. I laid my spoon down in favor of a shovel. After a while, I tossed the shovel aside and stepped up into a backhoe. Today I'm still mining the riches God placed in my born-again spirit!

My attitude completely changed since discovering these truths. When problems came, I used to feel inadequate. I'd lament, "O God, I know You've got power, but I'm just a man. I don't have any power at my disposal." Then I realized I'm not just a man anymore. One-third of me is complete. One-third of me is identical to and one with Jesus. One-third of me is wall-to-wall Holy Ghost. Because of the confidence, security, and faith this has given me, I can confront and overcome problems now that I wasn't able to before. As you keep digging, these truths will do the same for you!

# One with Jesus

## Lesson 7 – Outline

1. As Jesus is, so are you—right now—in this world.

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world” (1 John 4:17, emphasis mine).**

- A. It’s not your body, nor your soul, but your spirit—the born-again part of you—that’s as Jesus is.
- B. Over time, you’ll see radical changes manifest as you continue believing this truth and continue releasing God’s corresponding power from within your born-again spirit.

2. You are one with Jesus Christ right now.

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit” (1 Cor. 6:17).**

- A. “One” means “a single (one), to the exclusion of others” (*Vine’s Expository Dictionary*).
- B. In your spirit, you are completely one with Him.

3. You can believe and experience these truths.

- A. You can be transformed by renewing your mind to the point where you prove—manifest to your physical senses—the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God (Rom. 12:1-2).
- B. By embracing the Word, you’ll be able to see the perfection that’s in your spirit start flowing out through your soul and body to impact your life and those God touches through you.

4. If you think that what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel is all there is to reality, you won’t be able to walk in all of God’s will.

- A. You won’t experience the power and ability of God within if you can’t perceive things beyond your body and soul.
- B. If you think that God’s power is with Him somewhere out there, you’ll doubt you can ever attain it and will eventually become discouraged.
- C. You must believe you are one with Him in spirit and that it’s your responsibility to release His power from within in order to see it manifest.

5. As I kept digging into God’s Word, I realized that I’m not just a man anymore.

- A. One-third of me is complete, identical to and one with Jesus, and wall-to-wall Holy Ghost.

- B. Because of the confidence, security, and faith this has given me, I can confront and overcome problems now that I wasn't able to before.
- C. As you keep digging, these truths will do the same for you.

# One with Jesus

## Lesson 7 – Teacher’s Guide

1. As Jesus is, so are we—right now—in this world (1 John 4:17). It’s not our bodies, nor our souls, but our spirits—the born-again part of us—that’s as Jesus is. Over time, we’ll see radical changes manifest as we continue believing this truth and continue releasing God’s corresponding power from within our born-again spirits.
  2. We are one with Jesus Christ right now (1 Cor. 6:17). “One” means “a single (one), to the exclusion of others” (*Vine’s Expository Dictionary*). In our spirits, we are completely one with Him.
  3. We can believe and experience these truths. We can be transformed by renewing our minds to the point where we prove—manifest to our physical senses—the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God (Rom. 12:1-2). By embracing the Word, we’ll be able to see the perfection that’s in our spirits start flowing out through our souls and bodies to impact our lives and those God touches through us.
  4. If we think that what we can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel is all there is to reality, we won’t be able to walk in all of God’s will. We won’t experience the power and ability of God within if we can’t perceive things beyond our bodies and souls. If we think that God’s power is with Him somewhere out there, we’ll doubt we can ever attain it and will eventually become discouraged. We must believe we are one with Him in spirit and that it’s our responsibility to release His power from within in order to see it manifest.
  5. As I kept digging into God’s Word, I realized that I’m not just a man anymore. One-third of me is complete, identical to and one with Jesus, and wall-to-wall Holy Ghost. Because of the confidence, security, and faith this has given me, I can confront and overcome problems now that I wasn’t able to before. As you keep digging, these truths will do the same for you.
- 
1. A. Consider 1 John 4:17. What part of our beings is this true of? (Our born-again spirits)  
B. As we renew our minds to this truth, will the change come overnight or over time? (Over time)
  2. What does 1 Corinthians 6:17 reveal about our relationship with Jesus? (We are one spirit)
  3. A. What does “prove” mean in Romans 12:1-2? (Make manifest to our physical senses)  
B. How do we make God’s good, acceptable, and perfect will manifest to our physical senses? (Through being transformed by the renewing of our minds)  
C. How do we see the perfection that’s in our spirits start flowing out through our souls and bodies? (By embracing God’s Word)
  4. A. Is what we can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel all there is to reality? (No)  
B. If we think God’s power is with Him somewhere out there, what will we do? (We’ll doubt we can ever attain it and will eventually become discouraged)  
C. What must we believe in order to see His power manifest? (That we are one with Him in spirit and that it’s our responsibility to release His power)
  5. As we keep digging into God’s Word, what will these truths do for us? (We’ll realize that one-third of us is complete, identical to and one with Jesus, and wall-to-wall Holy Ghost. We’ll have confidence, security, and faith to confront and overcome problems that we weren’t able to before)

# **One with Jesus**

*Lesson 7 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to 1 John 4:17, as Jesus is \_\_\_\_\_.
2. Right now, is Jesus sick, depressed, impoverished, or defeated?
3. What does this tell us of God’s will for our lives?
4. What does this revelation do in our hearts?
5. First Corinthians 6:17 says that whoever is \_\_\_\_\_ unto the Lord is \_\_\_\_\_ spirit.
6. This means that in our born-again spirits, we are:
  - A. Separate from the Lord.
  - B. Partially united with Jesus.
  - C. Completely one with Him.
7. According to Romans 12:2, how do you “prove” to yourself and others what the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God is?
8. Discussion question: When problems come, have you been feeling inadequate, saying, “O God, I’m just a person. I don’t have any power”? Explain.
9. Discussion question: Which tool—a spoon, a shovel, or a backhoe—best describes what you believe you’re currently using to mine the riches in your born-again spirit?

# **One with Jesus**

## *Lesson 7 – Answer Key*

1. So are we in this world.
2. No. He's healthy, joyful, prosperous, and victorious.
3. He wants us manifesting health, joy, prosperity, and victory.
4. It perfects our love and gives us boldness in the Day of Judgment.
5. Joined, one.
6. C. Completely one with Him.
7. Be transformed by the renewing of your mind.
8. Discussion question.
9. Discussion question.



# **One with Jesus**

## *Lesson 7 – Scriptures*

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world” (1 John 4:17).**

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit” (1 Cor. 6:17).**

**“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God” (Rom. 12:1-2).**



# Sealed!

## Lesson 8

.....

No human being could have dreamt up the new birth and all of the realities that took place in our born-again spirits. It's just beyond our imaginations that God would indwell us and that our spirits would be as He is in this world.

If you've received the revelation thus far, you can say, "I see it! I'm a brand-new person in my spirit. Old things passed away, and all things have become new. As Jesus is right now, so am I in this world. My spirit, the real me, was created in righteousness and true holiness."

Many people who have seen these truths, who rejoiced over them, and who were immediately impacted have since sinned or gotten busy and forgotten. Something happened and they found themselves back in some of the same negative situations they were in before being born again (i.e., defeat, discouragement, etc). Due to their own apparent failure, they feel, *Maybe I was changed, but I've blown it . . . again*. Regarding everything we've discussed thus far about what happened at salvation, they argue, "That may have been so before, but I've blown it so much since then that it can't possibly be true of me now!"

I have good news—what God does in the spirit always remains constant and unchanging, regardless of fluctuations in your performance!

### *Imprisoned*

Inmates are descriptive of us all. Everyone has prisons—problems in their lives that keep them bound up. It's just that our problems aren't always quite as obvious as those of someone who's been placed behind bars.

In jail, many people realize that they've been ruining their own lives. No longer wanting the mess they have, they look around wondering, *How can I change? I need to get out of here!*

Then some minister comes across their path preaching:

**"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new" (2 Cor. 5:17).**

The thought that God loves them and wants to completely change their lives fits perfectly with what's going through most prisoners' minds. They desperately want to change, get out of there, and see their lives go in a different direction. So they pray and accept the Lord—not only for eternal benefit but also for the purpose of immediate change.

A newly born-again prisoner will often become vulnerable to discouragement, doubt, and unbelief because they don't understand that the change took place in their spirit and that the rest of their Christian life involves renewing their mind to believe and release what God has already put

inside them. The next morning they wake up to find themselves in the same cell, facing the same trials and the same penalties. Looking only in the physical realm, it's easy for them to conclude, "It didn't work. The Word isn't true. God didn't change me, because everything's still the same!"

This happens outside of jail too. Waking up the next morning, you find yourself still married to the same person, working the same job, facing the same sickness, and under the same mountain of debt. In fact, many times your problems intensify once you're born again. That's just the devil throwing everything he has at you because you're no longer on his side, and he wants to stop your witness. If you're not careful, you can become confused and think, *I'm not sure anything really happened!*

The change occurred in the spirit, not the physical realm. In fact, one-third of it is already complete. Your new man has been created in righteousness and true holiness (Eph. 4:24). You're not evolving into it because, in your spirit, you already are.

### *Accepted*

Jesus became sin so you could become righteous.

**"For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him"** (2 Cor. 5:21).

Jesus became what you were so that you could become what He is. He took your sin and gave you His righteousness.

Most of the church today acknowledges that Jesus paid the price for their sin, but they don't really believe they have become righteous. They think this takes place in the future when they arrive in heaven. Second Corinthians 5:21 refutes this misunderstanding by declaring that He took (past tense) your sin *and* made (past tense) you righteous. If you believe the first half of this verse, then you ought to believe the second half too. You are righteous!

God doesn't look at you the way you look at yourself. He looks at your spirit and sees that you are righteous. Most people pray, "O God, I'm so sorry. I've failed You miserably again. How can You love me? Have mercy!" They don't recognize the truth that the performance of their bodies and souls, either good or bad, has absolutely no bearing on whether or not God accepts them. If you're born again, it doesn't matter if you've rebelled or just aren't everything you should be. God sees you as righteous and truly holy because He's looking at your spirit.

God is pleased with you!

**"Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved"** (Eph. 1:5-6).

"Accepted" means more than just mere toleration. He's literally pleased with you. You might not be pleased with the shape that your mind or body is in, but God sees you in the spirit. When you were born again, you became a brand-new creature, and He's pleased with His workmanship!

The same Greek word translated “accepted” in Ephesians 1:6 was translated “highly favoured” in Luke 1:28:

**“And the angel [Gabriel] came in unto her [Mary], and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women”**  
(brackets and emphasis mine).

These are the only two places in Scripture this particular word is found. Therefore, as the woman who bore Christ was accepted, so are you highly favored of the Lord!

### ***Preserved & Protected***

Once you believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit.

**“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise”** (Eph. 1:13).

Your born-again spirit was created in righteousness and true holiness (Eph. 4:24). As Jesus is, so became your spirit right here in this world (1 John 4:17). It became one with the Lord (1 Cor. 6:17). Then, all of this goodness was immediately sealed tight with the Holy Spirit.

When someone cans food, they seal the jar with paraffin. This makes an airtight seal that preserves and protects the food within. Airborne impurities are prevented from getting inside and causing the food to rot and spoil. That’s how this word “sealed” is used in Ephesians 1:13!

When you were born again, your spirit was immediately encased—vacuum packed—by the Holy Spirit for the purpose of preservation. When you fail in any area of your life after being saved, the rottenness, uncleanness, and defilement that come to your body and soul don’t penetrate your spirit. This Holy Spirit seal keeps the good in and the bad out!

God doesn’t look at sin the way people do. To Him, sin isn’t only doing something wrong by violating a command; it’s also not doing something right that you should have done.

**“Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin”**  
(James 4:17).

Nobody loves their mate exactly like Christ loved the church. No one is as passionate about ministering to others as they should be. No one meditates on the things of God as much as they could. Therefore, according to God’s definition of sin, everyone constantly falls short!

If you don’t understand that the Holy Spirit encased your born-again spirit, your conscience will eventually give you the impression that you’ve lost the righteousness and true holiness your spirit was created in. Your conscience, with its knowledge of right and wrong, constantly bears witness to your mind about your thoughts and actions. If you aren’t careful, you’ll allow the knowledge of your failures to affect you. You’ll think, *Well, when I was born again, God gave me a brand-new start, but I’ve failed since then.* You may confess, try hard, and get back to where you

feel like you're back on track and everything's fine, but it won't be long before your conscience shows you something else. If you go up and down like this day after day, year after year (which you do), after a while you'll think, *What's the use?*

### ***Born of God***

However, the truth is that your spirit was sealed. Sin and its effects cannot enter into your spirit. When you sin, your spirit does not participate. It retains its original holiness and purity—and will for eternity.

**“Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God” (1 John 3:9).**

This means you are as righteous and holy in your spirit now as you will ever be!

This truth is pivotal to your relationship with God. If you tie His acceptance to your performance, you'll always come short. You might do better than certain other people, but your own conscience will condemn you. Eventually, it'll keep you from enjoying God's love and blessings, because you know that you've tried and tried but still have faults after all these years. When you understand spirit, soul, and body, you know that it was your spirit that changed. Created in righteousness and true holiness, it's been sealed by the Holy Spirit, so no sin can penetrate it. The righteousness you were born again with stays uncontaminated. Since God is a Spirit, He always deals with you Spirit to spirit. No matter how you're performing, you can always approach Him in your born-again spirit. That's awesome!

# Sealed!

## Lesson 8 – Outline

1. What God does in the spirit always remains constant and unchanging, regardless of fluctuations in your performance.
2. A newly born-again believer will often become vulnerable to discouragement, doubt, and unbelief because they don't understand that the change took place in their spirit and that the rest of their Christian life involves renewing their mind to believe and release what God has already put inside them.
  - A. Looking only in the physical realm, it's easy for them to conclude, "It didn't work. The Word isn't true. God didn't change me, because everything's still the same."
  - B. The devil wants to stop your witness, so he'll often throw everything he has at you as soon as you're born again.
3. Jesus became sin so you could become righteous.

**“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him” (2 Cor. 5:21).**

- A. Jesus became what you were so that you could become what He is.
  - B. He took your sin and gave you His righteousness.
  - C. If you believe the first half of 2 Corinthians 5:21, then you ought to believe the second half too.
  - D. God sees you as righteous and truly holy because He's looking at your spirit.
4. God is pleased with you.

**“Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved” (Eph. 1:5-6).**

- A. The same Greek word translated “accepted” was also translated “highly favoured.”

**“And the angel [Gabriel] came in unto her [Mary], and said, Hail, thou that art *highly favoured*, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women” (Luke 1:28, brackets and emphasis mine).**

- B. As the woman who bore Christ was accepted, so are you highly favored of the Lord.

5. Once you believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit.

**“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise”** (Eph. 1:13).

- A. All the righteousness, holiness, and goodness your born-again spirit was recreated with was immediately sealed tight with the Holy Spirit.
  - B. When you were born again, your spirit was immediately encased—vacuum packed—by the Holy Spirit for the purpose of preservation.
  - C. When you fail in any area of your life after being saved, the rottenness, uncleanness, and defilement that comes to your body and soul doesn’t penetrate your spirit.
  - D. This Holy Spirit seal keeps the good in and the bad out.
6. Sin isn’t only doing something wrong by violating a command; it’s also not doing something right that you should have done.

**“Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin”**  
(James 4:17).

- A. According to God’s definition of sin, everyone constantly falls short.
  - B. If you don’t understand that the Holy Spirit encased your born-again spirit, your conscience will eventually give you the impression that you’ve lost the righteousness and true holiness your spirit was created in.
7. When you sin, your spirit doesn’t participate.

**“Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God”** (1 John 3:9).

- A. You are as righteous and holy in your spirit now as you will ever be.
- B. No matter how you’re performing in your body and soul, you can always approach God through who you are in your born-again spirit.



# Sealed!

## *Lesson 8 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. What God does in the spirit always remains constant and unchanging, regardless of fluctuations in our performance.
2. A newly born-again believer will often become vulnerable to discouragement, doubt, and unbelief because they don’t understand that the change took place in their spirit and that the rest of their Christian life involves renewing their mind to believe and release what God has already put inside them. Looking only in the physical realm, it’s easy for them to conclude, “It didn’t work. The Word isn’t true. God didn’t change me, because everything’s still the same.” The devil wants to stop our witness, so he’ll often throw everything he has at us as soon as we’re born again.
3. Jesus became sin so we could become righteous (2 Cor. 5:21). Jesus became what we were so that we could become what He is. He took our sin and gave us His righteousness. If we believe the first half of 2 Corinthians 5:21, then we ought to believe the second half too. God sees us as righteous and truly holy because He’s looking at our spirits.
4. God is pleased with us (Eph. 1:5-6). The same Greek word translated “accepted” in Ephesians 1:6 was translated “highly favoured” in Luke 1:28. As the woman who bore Christ was accepted, so we are highly favored of the Lord.

1. Do fluctuations in our performance change what God has done in the spirit? (No)
2. Why are newly born-again believers vulnerable to discouragement, doubt, and unbelief? (They don’t understand that the change took place in their spirits and that the rest of the Christian life involves renewing their minds to believe and release what God has already put inside them)
3. A. Read 2 Corinthians 5:21. What did Jesus become? (Sin)  
B. What did we become? (The righteousness of God)  
C. What part of our beings is righteous? (Our spirits)
4. A. Read Ephesians 1:5-6. Substitute “highly favoured” in place of “accepted.”  
B. Read Luke 1:28. Substitute “accepted” in place of “highly favoured.”

5. Once we believed, we were sealed with the Holy Spirit (Eph. 1:13). All the righteousness, holiness, and goodness our born-again spirits were recreated with was immediately sealed tight with the Holy Spirit. When we were born again, our spirits were immediately encased—vacuum packed—by the Holy Spirit for the purpose of preservation. When we fail in any area of our lives after being saved, the rottenness, uncleanness, and defilement that comes to our bodies and souls doesn't penetrate our spirits. This Holy Spirit seal keeps the good in and the bad out.
6. Sin isn't only doing something wrong by violating a command; it's also not doing something right that we should have done (James 4:17). According to God's definition of sin, everyone constantly falls short. If we don't understand that the Holy Spirit encased our born-again spirits, our consciences will eventually give us the impression that we've lost the righteousness and true holiness our spirits were created in.
7. When we sin, our spirits do not participate (1 John 3:9). We are as righteous and holy in our spirits now as we will ever be. No matter how we're performing in our bodies and souls, we can always approach God through who we are in our born-again spirits.

5. A. According to Ephesians 1:13, when were we sealed with the Holy Spirit? (Once we believed)  
B. When we sin, does the rottenness, uncleanness, and defilement that comes to our bodies and souls penetrate our spirits? (No)
6. Read James 4:17. In addition to violating His commands, what else does God consider sin? (Not doing the good we know to do)
7. A. According to 1 John 3:9, can someone who is born of God sin? (No)  
B. When can we approach God through who we are in our born-again spirits? (Anytime)

# Sealed!

## *Lesson 8 – Additional Information*

Many people struggle to understand 1 John 3:9 because its context clearly shows that Christians do sin:

**“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us”**  
(1 John 1:8).

**“If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us”**  
(1 John 1:10).

**“My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous”**  
(1 John 2:1).

These are three instances from the same letter where the writer, the Apostle John, talks about sinning. The first two communicate, “If you say you haven’t sinned, you’re a liar.” He adds, “I’m writing to you so that you will not (future tense) sin. But if you do sin, you have an advocate with the Father.” Then, in verse 3:9 he declares, “If you’re born of God, you cannot sin.” That sounds very contradictory!

Both Scripture and experience reveal that Christians can sin. The context of 1 John shows that verse 3:9 isn’t saying that it’s impossible for a born-again believer to do something that’s sin. Yet it also clearly says that if you’re born of God, you cannot sin. How can this be?

### ***Big & Little Sins?***

Some people take 1 John 3:9 to mean you can’t “habitually” sin. Several Bible translations now even render it this way. People who think along this line preach that if you were a drunk before you were saved, you might get drunk once or twice, but if you’re truly saved, you won’t habitually sin. Eventually you’ll see victory in that area, or you weren’t truly born again.

In order to embrace this view, you have to categorize sin, which God doesn’t do. To Him, there are no “big” sins and “little” sins. By His definition, we all habitually sin. We all habitually fail to study God’s Word as much as we should. We all habitually fail to love others the way we should. We all habitually fail to be as considerate as we should. We all habitually get into self-centeredness, and God has to habitually deal with us about it.

Sometimes we also pass over things that God calls sin. For instance, the Lord views gluttony the same as drunkenness, adultery, and murder (Deut. 21:20 and Gal. 5:19-21). Gluttony is a sin that can only happen habitually. You can’t become overweight by eating just one large meal. Even if you gorged yourself, it would only make a pound or two of difference. In order to gain an extra fifty to a hundred pounds, you have to do it again and again and again. Being overweight is a habitual sin. This isn’t to condemn anyone but to put things in perspective.

If you interpret 1 John 3:9 to mean that you cannot habitually sin if you're truly born of God, then nobody would qualify, because we all habitually sin! The only way this can be preached is to say, "Well, you can't habitually do the 'big' sins, but the 'little' ones—yes, you can habitually sin." That's not what this verse is saying.

If you understand spirit, soul, and body, the interpretation of 1 John 3:9 is obvious. Your spirit is the only part of you that's been born of God. Your soul and body have been purchased, but not yet redeemed. Therefore, your spirit cannot sin even though your body and soul can. This means your performance doesn't affect the purity and holiness of your born-again spirit!

# Sealed!

## *Lesson 8 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Who is 2 Corinthians 5:17 speaking of?
2. Read 2 Corinthians 5:21. Who was made sin for us?
3. Had He known any sin before that?
4. Why was He made sin for us?
5. Discussion question: Until now, have you only believed the first half of 2 Corinthians 5:21? Explain.
6. Use Ephesians 1:5-6 and Luke 1:28 to create a personalized Scripture confession. Then read it out loud, declaring God’s Word over your life.
7. According to Ephesians 1:13, in whom did you trust?
8. What kind of “word” did you hear?
9. How is the Gospel described in this verse?
10. What happened once we believed?
11. According to James 4:17, to know to do good and not do it is \_\_\_\_\_.
12. First John 3:9 says that \_\_\_\_\_ is \_\_\_\_\_ of \_\_\_\_\_ does not commit sin.
13. What remains in them?
14. Therefore, can they sin?

# Sealed!

## *Lesson 8 – Answer Key*

1. Anyone who is in Christ.
2. Jesus.
3. No.
4. That we might be made the righteousness of God in Him.
5. Discussion question.
6. Example: “God predestinated me to be adopted as His child by Jesus Christ to Himself, according to the good pleasure of His will, to the praise of the glory of His grace, wherein He has made me accepted in the Beloved. I am blessed and highly favored because the Lord is with me. Hallelujah!”
7. Jesus Christ.
8. The word of truth.
9. The gospel of salvation.
10. We were sealed with the Holy Spirit.
11. Sin.
12. Whosoever, born, God.
13. His seed.
14. No.

# Sealed!

## *Lesson 8 – Scriptures*

**“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new” (2 Cor. 5:17).**

**“And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” (Eph. 4:24).**

**“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him” (2 Cor. 5:21).**

**“Having predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved” (Eph. 1:5-6).**

**“And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: blessed art thou among women” (Luke 1:28).**

**“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise” (Eph. 1:13).**

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world” (1 John 4:17).**

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit” (1 Cor. 6:17).**

**“Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin” (James 4:17).**

**“Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God” (1 John 3:9).**

**“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us” (1 John 1:8).**

**“If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us” (1 John 1:10).**

**“My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous” (1 John 2:1).**

**“And they shall say unto the elders of his city, This our son is stubborn and rebellious, he will not obey our voice; he is a glutton, and a drunkard” (Deut. 21:20).**

**“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God” (Gal. 5:19-21).**



# Eternal Redemption

## Lesson 9

.....

Hebrews 9 contrasts Old Testament Law with New Testament grace. What we've received through Jesus in the New Covenant is far superior to the Old. The Old Testament sacrifices couldn't really set anyone free; they were put in place as an illustration and a reminder to the people until the real sacrifice came. Since they were symbolic and couldn't really purge from sin, Old Testament sacrifices had to be offered over and over and over again. But now that Jesus has given His life as *the* sacrifice for sin, it never again needs to be repeated. Through Christ, the perfect sacrifice for sin has been made once for all!

Your born-again spirit never needs to be re-cleansed, re-purged, or born again, again!

**“But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us”** (Heb. 9:11-12).

Your salvation is eternal!

**“For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance”** (Heb. 9:13-15).

Jesus “entered in once into the holy place” and “obtained eternal redemption for us” (verse 12). Then, in verse 15, He provided an “eternal inheritance.” Each of these phrases emphasizes a one-time sacrifice that works once for all.

### *Once!*

God really wants this point driven home to us.

**“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now *once* in the**

**end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men *once* to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was *once* offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation” (Heb. 9:24-28, emphasis mine).**

Old Testament sacrifices were offered constantly, but Jesus entered once into the holy place and made one sacrifice. Since we die just once, He suffered once, and that one sacrifice paid for sin forever!

Old Testament sacrifices could not do what the New Testament sacrifice of Jesus did. They were only temporary shadows of the real thing to come.

**“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins” (Heb. 10:1-2).**

If the Old Testament sacrifices really could have made the people perfect, they wouldn't have had to be offered over and over again. If they had worked, the worshipers, once purged, should have had no more conscience of sins.

New Testament believers need not be conscious of sin. The Old Testament sacrifices couldn't do it, but the New Testament sacrifice could and did. If you believe the truth of God's Word, you can literally reach a place where you are no longer sin conscious. You would recognize that your spirit has been sanctified and perfected forever. God doesn't see you as a sinner; He sees your born-again spirit and is pleased. If you focus your thoughts on who you are in the spirit, you'll be conscious of righteousness!

The old phrase “I'm just a sinner, saved by grace” isn't true! If you're a sinner, then you need to be born again. If you were truly saved by grace, then you are no longer a sinner. Your spirit has been recreated in righteousness and true holiness, and it cannot sin. Neither can it be penetrated by sin in your body or soul because of the Holy Spirit seal. Don't approach God confessing, “I'm an old sinner.” Draw near to Him boldly because you are now “the righteousness of God in Christ” (2 Cor. 5:21).

Approach God through Jesus and what He did in your born-again spirit, saying, “Father, thank You that through Christ, I have boldness to enter right into Your very throne of grace because You have made me righteous!” If you honestly think, *O God, I'm so unrighteous*, then you either need to be born again, or you need to renew your mind and start believing the truth of God's Word. You've been made the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus!

### ***Past, Present & Future***

You've been forgiven of your sins—past, present, and future. That's what “eternal

redemption” means. You might think, *God can't forgive me of a sin before I even commit it!* Well, you'd better pray that He can, because Christ only died for your sins once. If Jesus can't forgive a sin before you commit it, then you can't be forgiven at all. Why? Jesus Christ hasn't died for sin in over 2,000 years!

Jesus paid for all sins—past, present, and future. Humans may not think this way, but God does. He's eternal. Time, distance, and space aren't problems for Him. Through His perfect sacrifice, God has already dealt with all sins.

When Jesus died, He put a will into effect.

**“By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all”** (Heb. 10:10).

You were sanctified—separated, made holy—through the offering of Jesus Christ *once for all time*.

Generally speaking, Pentecostals were the ones who came up with this doctrine of “backsliding,” that every time you sin, you lose your salvation, and if you don't confess it before you die, you'll go to hell despite the fact that you've been born again for twenty or thirty years. They erroneously interpret this verse to mean “one sacrifice for all people.”

However, the context proves that Hebrews 10:10 means one sacrifice made you holy for all time. Notice all the words referring to time in the next four verses.

**“And every priest standeth *daily* ministering and offering *oftentimes* the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man [Jesus], after he had offered one sacrifice for sins *for ever*, sat down on the right hand of God; From *henceforth* expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected *for ever* them that are sanctified”** (Heb. 10:11-14, emphasis and brackets mine).

Christ's one offering perfected and sanctified you forever!

In case you still aren't convinced, Hebrews 12:23 is another verse from the same context:

**“To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to *the spirits of just men made perfect*”** (emphasis mine).

How clear can it get? Your spirit has been perfected forever—for all time. You don't lose your right standing with God if you sin. What a radical, wonderful truth for the church today!

### ***David Saw It***

Most Christians are taught that their performance affects their relationship with God: When you are born again, you're forgiven, cleansed, and you become a brand-new person; however,

every time you sin, you lose that right standing with Him until you confess that particular sin and put it under the blood too. If you don't, God is displeased and cannot accept you. If you were to die before repenting and confessing all of those sins, you would go to hell. In a sense, they're saying you must be born again, again. That's not what God's Word teaches!

The Bible speaks of eternal redemption and eternal inheritance. You aren't sanctified and perfected only until you blow it—which is constantly. You're sanctified and perfected forever! People who believe they lose it all and have to start over again every time they sin will never really develop or see great growth in their spiritual lives. They're stuck in the flesh, focused on the performance of their bodies and their souls. God's Word reveals that your sins were forgiven—past, present, and future.

David saw by faith, through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, just how great salvation would be. Referring to Psalm 32:1-2, Paul said,

**“Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered [past and present tense sins]. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not [future tense] impute sin”**  
(Rom. 4:6-8, brackets mine).

Psalm 32:2 even adds,

**“And in whose spirit there is no guile.”**

David (an Old Covenant patriarch) saw prophetically the blessedness of your New Covenant relationship with God. Because of your born-again spirit's righteous nature, the Lord no longer holds any sin against you.

Now, that's good news!

# Eternal Redemption

## Lesson 9 – Outline

1. What we've received through Jesus in the New Covenant is far superior to the Old.
  - A. Old Testament sacrifices were symbolic and had to be offered over and over again.
  - B. Jesus gave His life once—as the perfect sacrifice for sin—and it never again needs to be repeated.
2. Your born-again spirit never needs to be re-cleansed, re-purged, or born again, again.

**“But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us” (Heb. 9:11-12).**

3. Your salvation is eternal.

**“For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance” (Heb. 9:13-15).**

4. Jesus entered once into the holy place and made one sacrifice.

**“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now *once* in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men *once* to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was *once* offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation” (Heb. 9:24-28, emphasis mine).**

5. The Old Testament sacrifices couldn't do what the New Testament sacrifice of Jesus did.
  - A. They were only temporary shadows of the real thing to come.

**“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins”** (Heb. 10:1-2).

- B. If the Old Testament sacrifices really could have made the people perfect, they wouldn't have had to be offered over and over again.
  - C. If they had worked, the worshipers—once purged—should have had no more conscience of sin.
6. New Testament believers need not be conscious of sin.
- A. If you focus your thoughts on who you are in the spirit, you'll be conscious of righteousness.
  - B. Draw near to God boldly because you are now the righteousness of God in Christ.

**“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him”** (2 Cor. 5:21).

7. “Eternal redemption” means that you've been forgiven of your sins—past, present, and even future tense sins.
- A. You were sanctified—separated, made holy—through the offering of Jesus Christ once for all time.

**“By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all”** (Heb. 10:10).

- B. The context proves that Hebrews 10:10 means one sacrifice made you holy for all time.

**“And every priest standeth *daily* ministering and offering *oftentimes* the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man [Jesus], after he had offered one sacrifice for sins *for ever*, sat down on the right hand of God; From *henceforth* expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected *for ever* them that are sanctified”** (Heb. 10:11-14, emphasis and brackets mine).

8. Christ's one offering perfected and sanctified you forever.

**“To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to *the spirits of just men made perfect*”** (Heb. 12:23, emphasis mine).

- A. David saw by faith, through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, just how great salvation would be.

**“Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered [past and present tense sins]. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not [future tense] impute sin”** (Rom. 4:6-8, quoted from Ps. 32:1-2, brackets mine).

In Psalm 32:2, David even added,

**“And in whose spirit there is no guile.”**

- B. Because of your born-again spirit’s righteous nature, the Lord no longer holds any sin against you.

# Eternal Redemption

## *Lesson 9 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. What we’ve received through Jesus in the New Covenant is far superior to the Old. Old Testament sacrifices were symbolic and had to be offered over and over again. Jesus gave His life once—as the perfect sacrifice for sin—and it never again needs to be repeated.
2. Our born-again spirits never need to be re-cleansed, re-purged, or born again, again (Heb. 9:11-12).
3. Our salvation is eternal (Heb. 9:13-15).
4. Jesus entered once into the holy place and made one sacrifice (Heb. 9:24-28).
5. The Old Testament sacrifices couldn’t do what the New Testament sacrifice of Jesus did. They were only temporary shadows of the real thing to come (Heb. 10:1-2). If the Old Testament sacrifices really could have made the people perfect, they wouldn’t have had to be offered over and over again. If they had worked, the worshipers—once purged—should have had no more conscience of sin.
6. New Testament believers need not be conscious of sin. If we focus our thoughts on who we are in the spirit, we’ll be conscious of righteousness. We draw near to God boldly because we are now the righteousness of God in Christ (2 Cor. 5:21).
7. “Eternal redemption” means that we’ve been forgiven of our sins—past, present, and even future tense sins. We were sanctified—separated, made holy—through the offering of Jesus Christ once for all (Heb. 10:10). The context proves that Hebrews 10:10 means one sacrifice made us holy for all time (Heb. 10:11-14).
8. Christ’s one offering perfected and sanctified us forever (Heb. 12:23). David saw by faith, through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, just how great salvation would be (Rom. 4:6-8 and Ps. 32:1-2). Because of our born-again spirits’ righteous nature, the Lord no longer holds any sin against us.

1. Why were Old Testament sacrifices offered again and again? (They were symbolic)
4. According to Hebrews 9:24-28, how many times has Jesus offered Himself as a sacrifice? (Once)
5. A. Read Hebrews 10:1-2. What were only temporary shadows? (Old Testament sacrifices)  
B. What was the real thing to come? (The New Testament sacrifice of Jesus)  
C. What should the worshipers experience as a result of the true sacrifice? (No more consciousness of sins)
6. According to 2 Corinthians 5:21, what should New Testament believers be conscious of? (Righteousness)
7. A. What Bible term means that we’ve been forgiven of our sins—past, present, and even future tense sins? (Eternal redemption)  
B. Read Hebrews 10:10-14. The context proves that Hebrews 10:10 means one sacrifice made us holy for all \_\_\_\_\_. (Time)
8. A. According to Romans 4:6-8, which Old Testament patriarch saw by faith just how great salvation would be? (David)  
B. Read Psalm 32:1-2. What does this say about our born-again spirits? (There is no guile in them)



# **Eternal Redemption**

*Lesson 9 – Discipleship Questions*

1. In Hebrews 9:11, what is Christ described as?
2. What “tabernacle” is this verse referring to?
3. By what did Jesus enter the holy place in Hebrews 9:12?
4. How many times did He do this?
5. What did He obtain for us?
6. Since this redemption is eternal, do our born-again spirits ever need to be re-cleansed, re-purged, or born again, again?
7. In Hebrews 9:12-13, what are the blood of goats, calves, bulls, and the ashes of an heifer referring to?
8. According to Hebrews 9:14, what should the blood of Christ do in our lives?
9. Who is the “mediator of the new testament” in Hebrews 9:15?
10. What are the “called” to receive?
11. What does Hebrews 9:24 say about the Old Testament holy places (tabernacle and temple)?
12. According to Hebrews 9:25, how often did the high priest have to enter into the holy place with an animal’s blood?
13. How many times has Christ appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself (Heb. 9:26)?
14. According to Hebrews 9:27, how many times is it appointed unto men to die?
15. What’s after that?
16. In Hebrews 9:28, how many times was Christ offered to bear the sins of many?

17. According to Hebrews 10:1, why couldn't the sacrifices made under the Law (Old Covenant) make the comers thereunto perfect?
18. If they had really worked, what would have happened (Heb. 10:2)?
19. According to 2 Corinthians 5:21, the Righteous One became \_\_\_\_\_ so that the sinners could become \_\_\_\_\_.
20. In Hebrews 10:10, how many times was the body of Jesus Christ offered?
21. Through this offering, we are sanctified (made holy) for how long?
22. How many time-oriented words/phrases can you find in Hebrews 10:11-14?
23. What part of our beings does Hebrews 12:23 reveal has been "made perfect"?
24. What word is used in Romans 4:6-8 to describe someone in a New Covenant relationship with God?

# **Eternal Redemption**

## *Lesson 9 – Answer Key*

1. A high priest of good things to come.
2. The eternal tabernacle in heaven.
3. His own blood.
4. Once.
5. Eternal redemption.
6. No.
7. Old Testament sacrifices.
8. Purge our consciences from dead works to serve the living God.
9. Jesus Christ.
10. The promise of eternal inheritance.
11. Made with hands, they were only figures (representations) of the true holy place in heaven.
12. Every year.
13. Once.
14. Once.
15. Judgment.
16. Once.
17. They were only a shadow and an image of the good things to come.

18. They would have ceased to be offered, because the worshipers—once purged—would have had no more conscience of sins.
19. Sin, righteous.
20. Once, for all.
21. For all time.
22. Four: daily, oftentimes, henceforth, and forever (used twice).
23. Our spirits.
24. Blessed!

# **Eternal Redemption**

## *Lesson 9 – Scriptures*

**“But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? And for this cause he is the mediator of the new testament, that by means of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were under the first testament, they which are called might receive the promise of eternal inheritance” (Heb. 9:11-15).**

**“For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us: Nor yet that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: So Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time without sin unto salvation” (Heb. 9:24-28).**

**“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins” (Heb. 10:1-2).**

**“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him” (2 Cor. 5:21).**

**“By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God; From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified” (Heb. 10:11-14).**

**“To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect” (Heb. 12:23).**

**“Blessed is he whose transgression is forgiven, whose sin is covered. Blessed is the man unto whom the LORD imputeth not iniquity, and in whose spirit there is no guile” (Ps. 32:1-2).**

**“Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin” (Rom. 4:6-8).**

# Standard Gospel Questions

## Lesson 10

.....

Once people understand that their performance—either good or bad—doesn't affect their born-again spirits or their relationship with God, serious questions usually arise. People ask, "What are you saying? God will love me, and I won't lose my right standing with Him no matter what? Do you mean I can just go live in sin?" Paul dealt with this same thing!

**"What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?"**

(Rom. 6:1).

The answer, of course, is "God forbid" (Rom. 6:2).

Unless this question comes up, you aren't preaching the same Gospel as the Apostle Paul. He dealt with it four different times (Rom. 3:8, 6:1-2, 6:15; and Gal. 2:17)! Even though you have to explain what you mean, it should be a logical question.

Nobody interprets most churches today as saying "You can just go live in sin," because they're busy preaching so hard against it. This question never even comes up! Typical teaching today ties God's love and acceptance to your performance. Therefore, these messages given "in the name of the Lord" produce a works-righteousness (self-righteousness based on your actions) in most believers. The Bible doesn't teach that God accepts or rejects you because of your actions; it teaches that your actions can never be good enough!

God's Word says He accepts you based on whether your spirit is righteous or not. That spirit doesn't become righteous through your good actions and attitudes. Righteousness comes through confessing Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior. As you are born again, God gives you this brand-new spirit. Righteousness is **NOT** based on your actions!

The next question people ask is, "Are you saying it doesn't matter how I live?" No, that's not what I'm saying. Paul continued in Romans 6, giving two reasons why a Christian should live holy:

1. Your new nature desires it.
2. You don't want to give the devil access to your body and soul through sin.

How you live doesn't affect your spirit's righteousness, but it greatly affects your life!

### ***Sin's Strength***

If you are truly born again, God has changed your nature.

**"How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not,**

**that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?”** (Rom. 6:2-3).

You are no longer a child of the devil who loves to sin. You do still sin, but it’s not your nature anymore. Your spirit has been changed, and you no longer enjoy it. Every born-again believer has a built-in desire to live holy (1 John 3:3). You might not be fulfilling it, but it’s there!

Preaching the Law—legalism and religious works—actually strengthens sin (1 Cor. 15:56). The Law makes you sin more by causing you to lust for the very thing that’s forbidden. That’s why God gave it! Mankind was being destroyed by sin, but we deceived ourselves into thinking, *I’m pretty good!* God answered, saying, “Oh, you think you’re okay? Let Me show you what the real standard is.” The Law made sin come alive so you’d recognize your need for a Savior (Rom. 7:9 and Gal. 3:24).

The Lord’s purpose in sending the Law was to make you bow your knee and confess, “God, have mercy on me! I can’t do it. I can’t break this sin!” The Law wasn’t given to help you overcome sin; it was to show you that sin had already overcome you! The Law actually strengthened sin and gave it so much power that it would effectively remove the deception that you could ever get rid of sin on your own. Religion, however, turns it around and says, “The Law was given to help you overcome sin.” That’s just not true.

If you’re truly born again, you have a desire to live for God.

**“And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure”** (1 John 3:3).

There will be varying degrees of this purity manifest in your actions and thoughts, but every born-again person seeks to purify themselves.

Sin gives Satan access to your body and soul.

**“Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?”** (Rom. 6:16).

Satan wants to bring death into your life any way he can—sickness, disease, poverty, shame, depression, discouragement, and all sorts of other nasty things. Why give your enemy an opportunity to come against you?

As a Christian, you don’t have to live holy in order for God to accept and be pleased with you. However, your actions and attitudes do determine how you get along with other people. That’s why it’s still to your advantage to live a holy life!

### ***Accidental Holiness***

Knowing that I can relate to God based on the perfection, holiness, and righteousness in my spirit has set me free *from* sin—not *to* sin. In my flesh, I won’t be completely perfect until I receive



my glorified body. Yet in the meantime, I can go ahead and relate to God based on who I am in my spirit. This makes my relationship with Him stable and secure.

I've lived a holier life accidentally than most people have on purpose. Whenever these truths are taught, people criticize, saying, "You're just preaching this so you can live in sin!" You can't accuse me of that, because I've never spoken a word of profanity, drunk liquor of any kind, smoked a cigarette, or even tasted coffee in all of my life. I'm not saying that coffee and booze are the same thing. There's scripture for drinking coffee.

Mark 16:18 promises:

**"If they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them."**

I'm just telling you that people can't look at me and say the reason I preach this is because it allows me to live in sin. No, I live a very holy life.

I don't live holy because I have to but because I want to. I don't do it in order to obtain God's blessing; I do it because He's revealed this truth to me and changed my heart. I desire to live holy because it's good for me. It helps me minister to others better, and it's happier to live holy than unholy!

God would still love me if I lived in sin (because my spirit is changed), but I wouldn't love me, and other people wouldn't love me either. Sin offends God, but it also offends people. If you're truly born again, He'll deal with you as His child, based on your born-again spirit. But people won't love you if you steal from them. If they catch you, they'll throw you in jail, where you'll suffer, be confined, and hurt. You won't have as nice of a life, but God will still love you. You'll still be righteous, but you'll also be stupid! (I'm not trying to be harsh; I'm only being blunt.)

Living holy doesn't make God love you more, but it does increase your love for Him. Likewise, a lack of holiness won't cause God to love you less, but it will definitely decrease your love for Him. Although God's love for you doesn't change, your performance directly affects your love for Him. Can you see now God's purpose for holiness?

### ***Come Boldly!***

Sin is never a wise choice, but it's also never an issue between you and God. He dealt with your sin—past, present, and future—when you were born again. You can come boldly before the Lord at any time—even when you've fallen short, even when you're displeased with yourself, even when you've given Satan an inroad into your life. You can still come boldly into the very presence of your Father and receive from Him because your spirit didn't lose any of its right standing with Him.

The Word encourages you to come before the Lord when you need mercy and help:

**"Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need" (Heb. 4:16).**

Don't just wait to come before Him until you've done everything "right." You can boldly approach the Lord and receive grace to help when you've totally messed things up. Your heavenly Father has invited you to draw near to His throne at any time by faith in His Son and who you are in Him. It's your birthright as a child of the King!

# Standard Gospel Questions

## Lesson 10 – Outline

1. Once people understand that their performance—either good or bad—doesn't affect their born-again spirits or their relationship with God, serious questions usually arise.
2. People ask, “Since God will love me and I won't lose my right standing with Him no matter what, can I just go live in sin?”

**“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid”** (Rom. 6:1-2).

- A. Unless this question comes up, you aren't preaching the same Gospel as the Apostle Paul.
  - B. Typical teaching today produces a works-righteousness (self-righteousness based on your actions) in most believers because it ties God's love and acceptance to your performance.
  - C. Righteousness is not based on your actions.
3. “Are you saying it doesn't matter how I live?”
    - A. If you are truly born again, God has changed your nature.

**“How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?”** (Rom. 6:2-3).

- B. If you're truly born again, you have a desire to live for God.

**“And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure”** (1 John 3:3).

- C. Sin gives Satan access to your body and soul.

**“Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?”** (Rom. 6:16).

- D. It's to your advantage to live holy, because your actions and attitude determine how you get along with other people.

4. Knowing that I can relate to God based on the perfection, holiness, and righteousness in my spirit has set me free *from* sin—not *to* sin.
  - A. This makes my relationship with Him stable and secure.

- B. I've lived a holier life accidentally than most people ever have on purpose.
  - C. I live holy because I want to, not because I have to.
5. God would still love me if I lived in sin (because my spirit is changed), but I wouldn't love me, and other people wouldn't love me either.
- A. Living holy doesn't make God love you more, but it does increase your love for Him.
  - B. A lack of holiness won't cause God to love you less, but it will definitely decrease your love for Him.
  - C. Although God's love for you doesn't change, your performance directly affects your love for Him.
6. Sin is never a wise choice, but it's also never an issue between you and God.
- A. He dealt with your sin—past, present, and future—when you were born again.
  - B. You can still come boldly into the very presence of your Father and receive from Him because your spirit didn't lose any of its right standing with Him.
- “Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need” (Heb. 4:16).**
- C. Your heavenly Father has invited you to draw near to His throne at any time by faith in His Son and who you are in Him.

# Standard Gospel Questions

## Lesson 10 – Teacher’s Guide

1. Once people understand that their performance—either good or bad—doesn’t affect their born-again spirits or their relationship with God, serious questions usually arise.
2. People ask, “Since God will love me and I won’t lose my right standing with Him no matter what, can I just go live in sin?” (Rom. 6:1-2). Unless this question comes up, we aren’t preaching the same Gospel as the Apostle Paul. Typical teaching today produces a works-righteousness (self-righteousness based on our actions) in most believers because it ties God’s love and acceptance to our performance. Righteousness is not based on our actions.
3. “Are you saying it doesn’t matter how I live?” If we’re truly born again, God has changed our nature and we desire to live for Him (Rom. 6:2-3 and 1 John 3:3). Sin gives Satan access to our bodies and souls (Rom. 6:16). Therefore, it’s to our advantage to live holy, because our actions and attitudes determine how we get along with other people.
4. Knowing that we can relate to God based on the perfection, holiness, and righteousness in our spirits will set us free *from* sin—not *to* sin. This makes our relationship with Him stable and secure. We’ll live holier lives accidentally than we ever have on purpose. We’ll live holy because we want to, not because we have to.

2. A. According to Romans 6:1, what serious question will normally arise once people understand that their performance doesn’t affect their born-again spirits? (Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?)  
B. If we never encounter this question, are we truly preaching the same Gospel as the Apostle Paul? (No)
3. A. Read Romans 6:2-3 and 1 John 3:3. What happens when we’re truly born again?  
(God changes our nature and we desire to live for Him)  
B. According to Romans 6:16, what happens when we sin? (We yield ourselves to Satan, giving him access to bring death into our souls and bodies)
4. A. Understanding that we can relate to God based on the perfection, holiness, and righteousness in our spirits makes our relationship with Him \_\_\_\_\_. (Stable and secure)  
B. Will we live holy because we have to or because we want to? (Want to)

5. God would still love us if we lived in sin (because our spirits have changed), but we wouldn't love ourselves, and other people wouldn't love us either. Living holy doesn't make God love us more, but it does increase our love for Him. A lack of holiness won't cause God to love us less, but it will definitely decrease our love for Him. Although God's love for us doesn't change, our performance directly affects our love for Him.
6. Sin is never a wise choice, but it's also never an issue between God and us. He dealt with our sin—past, present, and future—when we were born again. Even when we fail, we can still come boldly into the very presence of our Father and receive from Him because our spirits don't lose any of their right standing with Him (Heb. 4:16). Our heavenly Father has invited us to draw near to His throne at any time by faith in His Son and who we are in Him.

5. A. Does living holy—or not—affect God's love for us? (No)  
B. Does living holy—or not—affect our love for God? (Yes)  
C. How? (Living holy increases our love for Him, and living in sin decreases our love for Him)
6. A. Which of our sins did Jesus deal with the instant we were born again? (Past, present, and future sins)  
B. Read Hebrews 4:16. When we fail, can we still come boldly to the throne of grace and expect to receive from God? (Yes!)  
C. As long as we draw near to God by faith in His Son and who we are in Him, when can we approach our heavenly Father? (Anytime!)

# Standard Gospel Questions

## *Lesson 10 – Additional Information*

My teaching entitled “The Purpose of the Law” expounds much more on how the Law actually strengthens sin and causes you to lust for the very thing that’s forbidden.

In *The True Nature of God*, you’ll discover how God, who is the same yesterday, today, and forever (Heb. 13:8), can act so differently toward mankind from the Old Testament to the New. Without understanding how everything changed when Jesus Christ came, you’ll think God is schizophrenic. I assure you, He’s not!

I strongly recommend these resources for further study.

# Standard Gospel Questions

## *Lesson 10 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to Romans 6:1, what question did the Apostle Paul normally have to address while preaching the Gospel?
2. How does Romans 6:15 phrase this same question?
3. The answer, of course, is \_\_\_\_\_.
4. According to Romans 3:8, what did Paul's slanderers report that he said?
5. Read Galatians 2:17. What question is Paul addressing?
6. The answer, of course, is \_\_\_\_\_.
7. Can you see how both the question in Galatians 2:17 and the slanderous statement in Romans 3:8 are really just different expressions of the same basic questions Paul addressed in Romans 6:1-2 and 6:15?
8. According to Romans 6:2-3, why should a Christian live holy?
  - A. We are dead to sin.
  - B. We were baptized (placed) into Christ.
  - C. We have a new nature.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
9. First John 3:3 says that every believer desires to do what?
10. According to Romans 6:16, why else should a Christian live holy?
  - A. Sin gives Satan access to our bodies and souls.
  - B. Sin negatively affects our relationships with other people.
  - C. Living holy prevents our enemy from having opportunities to come against us.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
11. According to Hebrews 4:16, God has what kind of throne?
12. How, then, should we come before this throne?



13. What can we expect to receive from Him?
  
14. Discussion question: Take a moment and imagine yourself boldly approaching this throne of grace. Picture God—your heavenly Father—warmly and affectionately receiving you. See yourself receiving His mercy and His grace to help in your time of need. Is this easy or hard for you to see? Explain.
  
15. Discussion question: What does this tell you about how you currently view your relationship with God?

# Standard Gospel Questions

## *Lesson 10 – Answer Key*

1. “Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?”
2. “What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace?”
3. “God forbid.”
4. “Let us do evil, that good may come.”
5. “But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin?”
6. “God forbid.”
7. Yes.
8. D. All of the above.
9. Purify themselves, even as Jesus is pure.
10. D. All of the above.
11. A throne of grace.
12. Boldly.
13. Mercy and grace to help in time of need.
14. Discussion question.
15. Discussion question.

# Standard Gospel Questions

## *Lesson 10 – Scriptures*

**“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?” (Rom. 6:1-3).**

**“And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that good may come? whose damnation is just” (Rom. 3:8).**

**“What then? shall we sin, because we are not under the law, but under grace? God forbid. Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?” (Rom. 6:15-16).**

**“But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid” (Gal. 2:17).**

**“And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as he is pure” (1 John 3:3).**

**“The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law” (1 Cor. 15:56).**

**“For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, sin revived, and I died” (Rom. 7:9).**

**“Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith” (Gal. 3:24).**

**“They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover” (Mark 16:18).**

**“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need” (Heb. 4:16).**

**“Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever” (Heb. 13:8).**



# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## Lesson 11

.....

When I first started understanding this revelation, I wondered, *God, is it like the Baptists say—once saved, always saved? Or is it like other camps teach—saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again?* I struggled with these questions for a long time. Finally, the Lord spoke to me about it one day saying, “It’s not A—once saved, always saved; or B—saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again. It’s C—none of the above!” He showed me that both positions have a partial truth, but the full truth is somewhere in between.

The “once saved, always saved” camp understands that your spirit is sanctified and perfected forever. Since you aren’t saved by your own goodness, your lack of goodness can’t “un-save” you. If you confess faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, you are born again. Since faith is the issue, sin doesn’t cause you to lose your salvation.

Someone might say, “Now, wait a minute! I believe if you sin, you lose your salvation. You can’t tell me that a person who’s committed some grievous sin can go to heaven!”

Even though I would be considered “holy” by most religious standards, I’ve fallen short in my actions. I haven’t used profanity, drunk liquor, smoked a cigarette, or committed adultery, but I’ve broken some of God’s laws. I haven’t loved people the way I should. Neither have I always told the truth. I try to, but I remember being caught lying as a kid. I haven’t committed what’s considered “big” sins, but I’ve broken God’s Law.

### *Plate Glass Window*

**“For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all” (James 2:10).**

The Law is like a plate glass window. You could shoot a BB through it and make a little hole or throw a piano through it and make a huge one. Size makes no difference, because the glass can’t be patched. It’s broken and must be replaced. If you violate one tiny command, you’re guilty of breaking the whole thing.

You might not be transgressing all of God’s commands, but you won’t ever be able to do everything He’s told you to do. Nobody always does all of the good they know to do (James 4:17). Therefore, everyone falls short.

Those who say “You have to be holy; you can’t have sin in your life and still think you’re saved” have to categorize it into “big” sin and “little” sin. They contend, “I’m talking about the big things. You can’t tell me that a person who commits adultery and dies in a car accident on the way home with their sin not confessed would still be saved. Surely, they would go directly to hell. You can’t tell me that an adulterer would go to heaven.” Forgive me for bursting your bubble, but that’s religious tradition!

According to God's Word, there is no such thing as a "big" sin or a "little" sin (James 2:10). Speeding while driving is sin. Romans 13:1-7 instructs you to obey the laws of the land and to submit yourself to the governing authorities. Driving 56 in a 55 mph zone is breaking the command of God. If you break a little command, you are guilty of violating the entire thing.

The speeder is as guilty of sin as the adulterer. In man's eyes, there is a radical difference between going 1 mph over the speed limit and committing adultery. A speeder and an adulterer deserve different consequences in man's opinion, but in the eyes of God, sin is sin. Both come short of His standard of perfection. If you keep the whole Law and yet offend in one point, you become guilty of it all.

If the born-again believer who committed adultery and didn't confess it before dying goes straight to hell, then so does every believer who has ever sped. If that were true, then nobody would make it to heaven, because we all come short and fail in many different ways.

### ***Michael Jordan vs. Couch Potato***

If you've come short of the glory of God, you've missed it. Suppose you were in a room with a twenty-foot ceiling, and God said you had to jump up and touch it in order to be saved. If you're Michael Jordan, you might be able to jump fifteen feet high and get close. If you're a couch potato, you might only jump six inches and miss it by a bunch. Either way, the end result wouldn't be any different. If you can't touch the ceiling, you can't be saved. Both miss it!

That's the way it is with God's standard. He doesn't grade on a curve, saying, "Do the best you can. As long as you're in the top 10 percent, I'll accept you because you really tried." No, either you have to be perfect, or you need a Savior who was.

If you can sin your salvation away, then the only way to heaven is to die immediately after being born again. The loving thing to do with new converts would be to kill them. Then they wouldn't have a chance to sin and lose the salvation they just received. The evangelist who murdered them might go to hell, but the new believers wouldn't have time to void their ticket to heaven through sin. Sound ridiculous? It is!

Your spirit has been sealed, sanctified, and perfected forever. Its righteous state doesn't fluctuate with the holiness of your actions and attitudes. Since salvation depends solely upon putting your faith in Jesus and being born again, your sin doesn't affect your relationship with God. He fellowships with you based on your faith in Christ alone.

### ***Renouncing & Rejecting***

However, Scripture doesn't teach "once saved, always saved." Several places discuss the possibility of becoming reprobate and losing your salvation. Here is the classic example:

**"For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have**

**tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame” (Heb. 6:4-6).**

If a person falls away, there’s no more sacrifice. Hebrews 6:4-6 is located in the same context as the scriptures emphasizing how Jesus’ one offering provided your eternal redemption. However, if that one sacrifice is voided, there isn’t any other. It cannot be reapplied. You can’t be born again, again. Jesus Christ is not going to suffer through that shame and humiliation to die a second time. His *one* sacrifice was it—forever!

You can make the sacrifice of Christ of no effect by turning to legalism and trusting in your own works for righteousness.

**“O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?” (Gal. 3:1-3).**

Salvation is both received and maintained by faith in Christ alone.

**“Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering” (Heb. 10:23a).**

You can’t sin your salvation away, but you can renounce it. Rejecting your faith isn’t easily done, but it is possible. Personally, I don’t believe there are very many who do fall away.

### *Hardened*

Before someone would ever renounce so great a salvation, they would have to become hardened toward God (Heb. 3:13-14). Although your spirit is unaffected by sin, your body and soul are not. Sin dulls your perception, wisdom, and understanding of who you are in the spirit. If you persist in sin far and long enough, you can come to a place where Satan will try to make you renounce your faith in Christ. However, without being totally blinded to the truth, nobody in their right mind would ever reject the Lord.

If you renounce your faith and reject God, you can throw your salvation away. It’s not something you just lose, like misplaced car keys. You must deliberately and openly reject it. That’s something that takes place over a period of time.

You’re saved by the grace of God, so sinful actions don’t cause you to lose your salvation. However, sin can harden your heart until you eventually come to a place where *you* renounce your faith in the Lord (Heb. 6:4-6). If that happens, it’s impossible to ever be renewed again to repentance.

This contradicts “saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again.” Those who believe you lose your salvation every time you sin also believe that all you’ve got to do is confess it and you’re saved

again. You just “pray through” and come back into right standing with God. Hebrews 6:4-6 says that can never happen. Either you didn’t lose your salvation when you sinned, or if you did—you can never be saved again.

### ***Do You Qualify?***

The qualifications listed in Hebrews 6:4-6 are pretty stiff. You should look them over carefully before condemning yourself as reprobate. It’s not talking about that time you were frustrated and said “I’m quitting! This doesn’t work!” and then backslid into sin. No, it’s much more involved than that.

You can’t renounce your salvation ignorantly. That’s what Hebrews 6:4-6 is saying. You have to be a mature Christian who was drawn by the Spirit, born again, baptized in the Holy Ghost, mature in the Word, and operating in the gifts of the Spirit before you can reject the Lord. Only then are you held accountable.

### ***Too Young to Know Any Better***

One time when I was a child, somewhere between five and eight, I became upset and ran away from home. I took off running, but realized my mistake even before I lost sight of my house. *Where am I going? What will I eat? Where will I sleep? I love my parents!* I might have been angry, but I didn’t want to run away. Being too proud to admit it, I got caught up in a barbed wire fence on purpose so my brother would catch me (he’d been running after me to bring me home).

Since I wasn’t old enough, it wasn’t held against me. Even though I was mad and had declared “I don’t want to be a Wommack anymore!” before running away, it wasn’t imputed unto me. If the police had been called, they would have been on my parents’ side because I was so young. I didn’t know what I was attempting, nor was I legally able to do it.

However, now I’m old enough to decide. As an adult, I could change my name and make a formal separation from my parents. If I renounced them, the government would back me up, and I could legally reject them.

It’s the same thing with renouncing and rejecting salvation. God knows whether someone is mature or not. He alone knows their heart.

Are you repenting and sorry for what you’ve done? Do you desire to be in relationship with the Lord? If so, you aren’t reprobate. The Holy Spirit is still dealing with you. You weren’t mature enough when you turned your back or fell away. Like Paul, you’re forgiven because you were ignorant when you did those things (1 Tim. 1:13). Praise God—He’s your loving heavenly Father!



# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## Lesson 11 – Outline

1. When I first started understanding this revelation, I wondered, *God, is it once saved, always saved? Or is it saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again?*

A. The Lord said, “Neither.”

B. Both positions have a partial truth, but the full truth is somewhere in between.

2. The Law is like a plate glass window.

A. If you violate one tiny command, you’re guilty of breaking the whole thing.

**“For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all” (James 2:10).**

B. Therefore, everyone falls short.

C. According to God’s Word, there is no such thing as a “big” sin or a “little” sin.

3. If you’ve come short of the glory of God, you’ve missed it.

A. God doesn’t grade on a curve.

B. Either you have to be perfect, or you need a Savior who was.

C. Nobody always does all of the good they know to do (James 4:17).

4. Your spirit has been sealed, sanctified, and perfected forever.

A. Since salvation depends solely upon putting your faith in Jesus and being born again, your sin doesn’t affect your relationship with God.

B. He fellowships with you based on your faith in Christ alone.

5. Scripture doesn’t teach “once saved, always saved.”

**“For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame” (Heb. 6:4-6).**

A. If a person falls away, there’s no more sacrifice.

B. You can make the sacrifice of Christ of no effect by turning to legalism and trusting in your own works for righteousness.

**“O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?” (Gal. 3:1-3).**

- C. Salvation is both received and maintained by faith in Christ alone.
6. You can't sin your salvation away, but you can renounce it.
- A. It's not something you just lose. You must deliberately and openly reject it.
  - B. Although sinful actions don't cause you to lose your salvation, sin can harden your heart until you eventually come to a place where *you* renounce your faith in the Lord.
7. You can't renounce your salvation ignorantly.
- A. The qualifications listed in Hebrews 6:4-6 are pretty stiff.
  - B. You have to be a mature Christian who was drawn by the Spirit, born again, baptized in the Holy Ghost, mature in the Word, and operating in the gifts of the Holy Spirit before you can reject the Lord.
  - C. You aren't reprobate if the Holy Spirit is still dealing with you.

# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## *Lesson 11 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. When I first started understanding this revelation, I wondered, *God, is it once saved, always saved? Or is it saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again?* The Lord said, “Neither.” Both positions have a partial truth, but the full truth is somewhere in between.
2. The Law is like a plate glass window. If we violate one tiny command, we’re guilty of breaking the whole thing (James 2:10). Therefore, everyone falls short. According to God’s Word, there is no such thing as a “big” sin or a “little” sin.
3. If we’ve come short of the glory of God, we’ve missed it. God doesn’t grade on a curve. Either we have to be perfect, or we need a Savior who was. Nobody always does all of the good they know to do (James 4:17).
4. Our spirits have been sealed, sanctified, and perfected forever. Since salvation depends solely upon putting our faith in Jesus and being born again, our sin doesn’t affect our relationship with God. He fellowships with us based on our faith in Christ alone.

1. Which of these two positions—once saved, always saved or saved, lost, saved, lost, born again, again—has been emphasized more among the groups of believers you’ve fellowshiped with since being born again?
2. A. Read James 2:10. If someone keeps all the commandments of the Law except for one little tiny one, are they guilty of breaking it all? (Yes)  
B. In light of this scripture, is there such a thing as a “big” sin or a “little” sin from God’s perspective? (No)
3. A. According to James 4:17, what else does God consider “sin”? (Not doing the good we know we should do)  
B. Who, then, can claim to be perfect apart from Christ? (No one)
4. A. Does sin affect our relationship with God? (No)  
B. Why not? (He fellowships with us based on our faith in Christ alone)

5. Scripture doesn't teach "once saved, always saved" (Heb. 6:4-6). If a person falls away, there's no more sacrifice. We can make the sacrifice of Christ of no effect by turning to legalism and trusting in our own works for righteousness (Gal. 3:1-3). Salvation is both received and maintained by faith in Christ alone.
6. We can't sin our salvation away, but we can renounce it. It's not something we just lose. We must deliberately and openly reject it. Although sinful actions don't cause us to lose our salvation, sin can harden our hearts until we eventually come to a place where *we* renounce our faith in the Lord.
7. We can't renounce our salvation ignorantly. The qualifications listed in Hebrews 6:4-6 are pretty stiff. We have to be a mature Christian who was drawn by the Spirit, born again, baptized in the Holy Ghost, mature in the Word, and operating in the gifts of the Holy Spirit before we can reject the Lord. We aren't reprobate if the Holy Spirit is still dealing with us.

5. A. Read Hebrews 6:4-6. Is it possible for someone to fall away? (Yes)
- B. According to Galatians 3:1-3, how can we make the sacrifice of Christ of no effect? (By turning to legalism and trusting in our own works for righteousness)
- C. Salvation is both received and maintained by what? (Faith in Christ alone)
6. A. Can we sin our salvation away? (No)
- B. How, then, does someone fall away? (Sin hardens their heart until they eventually come to a place where *they* renounce their faith in the Lord)
7. A. What are the five qualifications listed in Hebrews 6:4-6 that must be met before someone can reject the Lord and fall away? (1. Someone who was drawn by the Spirit, 2. Genuinely born again, 3. Baptized in the Holy Spirit, 4. Mature in the Word, and 5. Operating in the gifts of the Holy Spirit)
- B. Is it possible to be "reprobate" if the Holy Spirit is still dealing with us? (No)

# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## *Lesson 11 – Additional Information*

In order to qualify as a biblical reprobate, you have to meet some very stiff requirements.

You have to (1) be enlightened, which means drawn by the Holy Ghost. John 6:44 declares:

**“No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him.”**

You couldn't have been coerced into making some statement, signing a church roll, or repeating a prayer. Then, after not experiencing a dramatic change, you became tired and renounced it, saying, “I reject this. It's not real!” If this describes you, it wasn't a true conviction from the Holy Spirit. You were coerced, not drawn. You went to church because your parents made you, or you were dating someone who had you repeat a prayer. You don't qualify! Therefore, you aren't even held accountable for that so-called “rejection.”

You also must have (2) tasted of the heavenly gift, which means you must be truly born again; (3) made a partaker of the Holy Ghost, which refers to being baptized in the Holy Spirit; (4) have tasted the good Word of God, which means the Word has literally impacted you. You've done more than just put it in your mouth—you've swallowed it, digested it, and benefited from the nutrients and life in it; and (5) you've tasted the power of the world to come, which refers to a Spirit-filled person who has exercised the gifts of the Holy Spirit and is going on to maturity. In other words, you must be a mature Christian before you can actually renounce your salvation.

If a mature Christian rejects the Lord, they can never be brought back to a place of repentance. It's a one-time deal. They're held accountable, damned, and that's it.

Jesus proclaimed that blasphemy against the Holy Spirit was the one unpardonable sin (Matt. 12:31-32). Yet Paul said he obtained mercy because he “did it ignorantly in unbelief” (1 Tim. 1:13). This shows that even the unpardonable sin of blaspheming the Holy Spirit depends upon whether or not you did it knowingly.

### ***Beyond Hope***

When someone rejects their salvation, they can never come back into relationship with God.

**“And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient. . . . Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them”**  
(Rom. 1:28 and 32).

Giving them over to a reprobate mind, God takes away the conviction of the Holy Spirit.

“Reprobate” means beyond hope. You aren't convicted of your need for relationship with

the Lord unless the Holy Spirit is dealing with you (John 6:44). As long as He's dealing with you, you aren't reprobate. However, if someone fulfills the qualifications of Hebrews 6:4-6 and renounces their salvation, then God takes the Holy Spirit away and they become reprobate. Without conviction, they no longer know they're doing wrong. Not only do they like it, but they like all those who are in rebellion against God too. Reprobates display a total lack of desire and response toward the Lord.

# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## *Lesson 11 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to James 2:10, if you keep the whole Law but offend in one point, are you guilty of just that one point?
2. Which word picture best represents the Law?
  - A. A window with multiple individual panes of glass.
  - B. A plate glass window.
  - C. A stained glass window.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
3. According to James 4:17, sin is also defined as \_\_\_\_\_.
4. Does anyone always do all the good they know they should do?
5. Put the following five qualifications from Hebrews 6:4-6 in their biblical order.
  - A. Mature in the Word.
  - B. Baptized in the Holy Spirit.
  - C. Drawn by the Holy Spirit.
  - D. Operating in the gifts of the Holy Spirit.
  - E. Genuinely born again.
6. Is it possible for someone who met all five of these qualifications to be renewed again to repentance once they've fallen away?
7. According to Hebrews 6:6, why can't someone reject their salvation and then receive it again?
8. What two words did Paul use in Galatians 3:1 to describe these people who had turned from the Gospel to legalism and were trusting in their own works for righteousness?
9. What had been plainly laid before their eyes?
10. What question is being asked in Galatians 3:2?
11. What's the correct answer to that question?
12. Is it possible to begin in the Spirit (Gal. 3:3) and be made perfect by the flesh?
13. What does the Bible call people who begin in the Spirit and then attempt to be made perfect by the flesh?

# Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?

## *Lesson 11 – Answer Key*

1. No, you're guilty of all.
2. B. A plate glass window.
3. Not doing the good we know we should do.
4. No.
5. C. Drawn by the Holy Spirit.  
E. Genuinely born again.  
B. Baptized in the Holy Spirit.  
A. Mature in the Word.  
D. Operating in the gifts of the Holy Spirit.
6. No.
7. Because they'd be crucifying the Son of God afresh and putting Him to an open shame.
8. Foolish and bewitched.
9. Jesus Christ, crucified.
10. "Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?"
11. We receive the Spirit by the hearing of faith.
12. No.
13. Foolish.



# **Once Saved, Always Saved or Born Again, Again?**

## *Lesson 11 – Scriptures*

**“For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all” (James 2:10).**

**“Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin” (James 4:17).**

**“Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same: For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil. Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. For this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God’s ministers, attending continually upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour” (Rom. 13:1-7).**

**“For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame” (Heb. 6:4-6).**

**“O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh?” (Gal. 3:1-3).**

**“Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised)” (Heb. 10:23).**

**“But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast unto the end” (Heb. 3:13-14).**

**“Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecutor, and injurious: but I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly in unbelief” (1 Tim. 1:13).**

**“No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day” (John 6:44).**

**“Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come” (Matt. 12:31-32).**

**“And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient. . . . Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them” (Rom. 1:28 and 32).**

# Fullness Received

## Lesson 12

.....

My spirit was created in righteousness and true holiness when I was born again (Eph. 4:24). Then, the Holy Spirit sealed this purity into my brand-new spirit (Eph. 1:13). Any sin I commit now in my physical actions cannot penetrate or contaminate my spirit, because it's been sanctified and perfected forever (Heb. 10:10, 14; and 12:23). My born-again spirit cannot sin (1 John 3:9).

I have received eternal redemption (Heb. 9:12). This doesn't encourage me to live in sin, but instead gives me stability in my life and relationship with God. I live holy because I want to, and if I don't, I know I'll give Satan and other people an opportunity against me (Rom. 6:16). Living holy is definitely more beneficial than living in sin.

God is pleased with me because of who I am in the spirit (John 4:24). When I do fall short, sin doesn't have dominion over me the way it used to, because I know now that God has already forgiven me completely—past, present, and future sin (Rom. 6:14). My spirit isn't stained in any way. Since God is a Spirit, I must fellowship with Him through who I am in the spirit.

My relationship with the Lord is constant. He's always loving me. He's always pleased with me—the real me, the born-again me, my spirit (Eph. 1:6). That's the part of me that God loves and that I've come to love. I'm not enamored with my carnal self and actions. I don't like some of what I see, do, and think, but I've come to realize there's a new me. In my spirit, I am thrilled with what Jesus has done, and I place my full confidence in that. Since I walk by the spirit and not the flesh, I experience God's peace, joy, and life on a daily basis.

My life is stable. I don't feel like I lose everything every time I sin or fall short. I don't think that I need to be born again, again and start the whole growth process over. This concept of "one step forward and two steps back" is totally gone. When I do fail, I just turn from it. I repent and get back on track with what God's told me to do, knowing that I'm still who I am in Christ and infinitely more in my spirit than I've ever yet been able to appropriate and manifest. That's why I actively and aggressively continue renewing my mind to His Word.

### *Fruit unto Holiness*

**“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness” (1 John 1:9).**

First John 1:9 has been traditionally taught that every time you sin, you have to confess it in order to receive forgiveness. If that's truly what it means, then this would put a tremendous burden upon you to deal with every sin. Religion categorizes sin, but God's Word is much more inclusive. Sin isn't only what you're doing wrong; it's also the right you failed to do. Some sins you realize; most others you don't. If you have to confess every sin before it's forgiven, nobody could retain their salvation. This just can't be what it means!

First John 1:9 refers to when you first come to the Lord. If forgiveness was dependent upon your confessing everything you've ever done wrong and failed to do right, salvation would be out of reach because you've forgotten too much. This verse instructs the unbeliever to be born again, not the believer to confess every sin all the time. It's how you first come to the Lord. You acknowledge your sin nature and separation from God in order to bow your knee and receive salvation. You confess that you're a sinner in need of forgiveness and are cleansed from all unrighteousness by receiving your brand-new, born-again spirit.

First John 1:9 can also mean cleansing the effects of sin from a believer's soul and body. Your spirit isn't affected by sin, but your soul and body are. Sin gives the devil a legal right to work his death into your life because you yielded yourself to him (Rom. 6:16). How do you repent of it and get him out? You say, "God, I was wrong and You were right. I sinned and gave Satan this opportunity. I repent!" By confessing, you take the salvation, the forgiveness, the holiness, and the righteousness that's already a reality in your spirit and which didn't fluctuate when you failed, and draw it out into your body and soul. This literally drives the devil out and takes his place away. The Enemy no longer has rights and privileges in your life once you repent and turn from what you've done!

If you understand your eternal redemption, you won't be emboldened to sin, but you'll be freed up to declare, "What a great God You are!" You'll want to spend even more time with Him. You'll desire to live holy so that nothing will ever dull you or keep you from perceiving these great truths and His love. Understanding your eternal redemption will cause you to live holy.

That's the way it should be. You shouldn't be trying to live holy out of fear of rejection and punishment; you ought to live holy as a result of your salvation. You should have "fruit unto holiness" (Rom. 6:22). Notice how it's a fruit, not a root, of salvation. Holiness doesn't produce God moving in your life, but your external actions of holiness are a result of understanding the righteous nature of your born-again spirit.

### *Never Separated from His Love!*

This truth has changed my life. It's given me a deep abiding security in my relationship with God because I know He loves me. In fact, He loves me infinitely more than I've ever yet perceived. After the warm feelings of my miraculous encounter with God subsided (because of my actions), I thought, *Well, He loved me at one time, but I'm not sure He still loves me now, because I just don't feel worthy.* Then I came to realize that my born-again spirit is righteous and holy. I recognized that God looks at me Spirit to spirit, and He loves the born-again part of me!

I'm His workmanship, "created in Christ Jesus unto good works" (Eph. 2:10). In my spirit, I'm perfect and pure. God loves me, and I'm never separated from His love. This sheds new light on these verses:

**"Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? . . . For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor**

**powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Rom. 8:35 and 38-39).**

In my spirit, God has already given me His full measure of love.

**“And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace” (John 1:16).**

I'm full of God. One-third of me is wall-to-wall Holy Spirit! And if you're born again, all these things are true of you too.

This knowledge will impact your life and make you feel so pure. You'll be so appreciative of what God has done that you'll live holier in your actions accidentally than you've ever lived on purpose.

# Fullness Received

## Lesson 12 – Outline

1. First John 1:9 has been traditionally taught that every time you sin, you have to confess it in order to receive forgiveness.

**“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness” (1 John 1:9).**

- A. If you have to confess every sin before it’s forgiven, nobody could retain their salvation.
  - B. This just can’t be what it means.
2. First John 1:9 refers to when you first come to the Lord.
    - A. This verse instructs the unbeliever to be born again, not the believer to confess every sin all the time.
    - B. You confess that you’re a sinner in need of forgiveness and are cleansed from all unrighteousness by receiving your brand-new, born-again spirit.
  3. First John 1:9 can also mean cleansing the effects of sin from a believer’s soul and body.
    - A. Your spirit isn’t affected by sin, but your soul and body are.
    - B. Sin gives the devil a legal right to work his death into your life because you yielded yourself to him (Rom. 6:16).
    - C. By confessing, you take the salvation, the forgiveness, the holiness, and the righteousness that’s already a reality in your spirit and which didn’t fluctuate when you failed, and draw it out into your body and soul.
    - D. This literally drives the devil out and takes his place away, because he no longer has rights and privileges in your life once you repent and turn away from what you’ve done.
  4. Understanding your eternal redemption will cause you to live holy.
    - A. You’ll desire to live holy so that nothing will ever dull you or keep you from perceiving these great truths and His love.
    - B. Holiness is a fruit—not a root—of salvation (Rom. 6:22).
    - C. Holiness doesn’t produce God moving in your life, but your external actions of holiness are a result of understanding the righteous nature of your born-again spirit.

5. This has given me a deep abiding security in my relationship with God.

A. I'm His workmanship.

**“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them” (Eph. 2:10).**

B. God loves me, and I'm never separated from His love.

**“Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? . . . For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Rom. 8:35 and 38-39).**

C. In my spirit, God has already given me His full measure of love.

**“And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace” (John 1:16).**

D. You'll be so appreciative of what God has done that you'll live holier in your actions accidentally than you've ever lived on purpose.

# Fullness Received

## *Lesson 12 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. First John 1:9 has been traditionally taught that every time we sin, we have to confess it in order to receive forgiveness. If we have to confess every sin before it’s forgiven, nobody could retain their salvation. This just can’t be what it means.
2. First John 1:9 refers to when we first come to the Lord. This verse instructs the unbeliever to be born again, not the believer to confess every sin all the time. We confess that we’re a sinner in need of forgiveness and are cleansed from all unrighteousness by receiving our brand-new, born-again spirits.
3. First John 1:9 can also mean cleansing the effects of sin from a believer’s soul and body. Our spirits aren’t affected by sin, but our souls and bodies are. Sin gives the devil a legal right to work his death into our lives because we yielded ourselves to him (Rom. 6:16). By confessing, we take the salvation, the forgiveness, the holiness, and the righteousness that’s already a reality in our spirits, and which didn’t fluctuate when we failed, and draw it out into our bodies and souls. This literally drives the devil out and takes his place away, because the Enemy no longer has rights and privileges in our lives once we repent and turn away from what we’ve done.

1. How has 1 John 1:9 been traditionally taught? (Every time we sin, we must confess it in order to receive forgiveness)
2. A. What does 1 John 1:9 instruct the unbeliever to do? (To be born again)  
B. What happens when an unbeliever confesses their sin? (They are cleansed from all unrighteousness by receiving their brand-new, born-again spirit)
3. A. According to 1 John 1:9, what are the results of a believer confessing their sin? (The believer’s soul and body are cleansed from the effects of sin)  
B. What gives the devil a legal right to work his death in our lives? (Sin)  
C. How do we drive him out of our lives and literally take his place away? (By confessing our sin and turning away from it, we draw out the salvation, forgiveness, holiness, and righteousness from our born-again spirits into our bodies and souls)



4. Understanding our eternal redemption will cause us to live holy. We'll desire to live holy so that nothing will ever dull us or keep us from perceiving these great truths and His love. Holiness is a fruit—not a root—of salvation (Rom. 6:22). Holiness doesn't produce God moving in our lives, but our external actions of holiness are a result of understanding the righteous nature of our born-again spirits.
5. This gives us a deep abiding security in our relationship with God. We're His workmanship (Eph. 2:10). God loves us, and we're never separated from His love (Rom. 8:35 and 38-39). In our spirits, God has already given us His full measure of love (John 1:16). We'll be so appreciative of what God has done that we'll live holier in our actions accidentally than we've ever lived on purpose.

4. A. According to Romans 6:22, is holiness a root or a fruit of salvation? (Fruit)  
B. Does holiness produce God moving in our lives? (No)  
C. What, then, are our external actions of holiness a result of? (Our understanding the righteous nature of our born-again spirits)
5. What does this understanding produce? (A deep abiding security in our relationship with God)

# **Fullness Received**

*Lesson 12 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What does Ephesians 4:24 reveal that our born-again spirits were created in?
2. According to Ephesians 1:13, what did the Holy Spirit do with this purity the instant we believed?
3. Read Hebrews 10:10, 14; and 12:23. Can the sin we commit now in our physical actions penetrate or contaminate our born-again spirits?
4. According to 1 John 3:9, can our born-again spirits sin?
5. What does Hebrews 9:12 reveal about the redemption Christ obtained for us?
  - A. It's temporary.
  - B. It's eternal.
  - C. It's contingent.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
6. According to John 4:24, how does God see us?
7. Ephesians 1:6 says that we are?
8. What part of us is in the Beloved?
9. According to 1 John 1:9, what is our part?
10. What is God's part?
11. Who is 1 John 1:9 primarily directed toward?
12. What happens when an unbeliever confesses their sins and repents?
13. What happens when a believer confesses their sins and repents?
14. Notice the word "whom" in Romans 6:16. According to this verse, to whom can we be servants?

15. If we yield ourselves to sin, whom are we serving?
16. What fruit does this produce in our lives?
17. If we yield ourselves to obedience, whom are we serving?
18. According to Romans 6:16, what fruit does this produce in our lives?
19. Fill in the blanks of the following personal confession based on Ephesians 2:10. I am God's \_\_\_\_\_, created in Christ Jesus unto \_\_\_\_\_, which God hath before ordained that I should \_\_\_\_\_ in them.
20. According to Romans 8:35 and 38-39, is there any external person or thing that can separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord?
21. In John 1:16, whose fullness have we received?
22. How much of His fullness does this verse reveal we have received?
  - A. Some.
  - B. Much.
  - C. All.
  - D. None.
23. Fill in the blanks of this personal confession based on John 1:16 and Colossians 2:9-10. I have received \_\_\_\_\_ of the fullness of Jesus Christ. In Him, I am \_\_\_\_\_. I'm full of God. One-third of me is wall-to-wall Holy Spirit! Hallelujah!

# Fullness Received

## *Lesson 12 – Answer Key*

1. Righteousness and true holiness.
2. He sealed it.
3. No.
4. No.
5. B. It's eternal.
6. Spirit to born-again spirit.
7. "Accepted in the beloved."
8. Our spirits.
9. To confess our sins.
10. To forgive our sins and cleanse us from all unrighteousness.
11. Unbelievers.
12. God forgives them their sins and cleanses them from all unrighteousness by giving them a brand-new, born-again spirit.
13. They draw out into their body and soul the forgiveness, holiness, and righteousness already present in their born-again spirit, which takes away the devil's place and drives him out of their life.
14. Either God or Satan.
15. Satan.
16. Death.

17. God.

18. Righteousness (a.k.a. external actions of holiness; see also verse 22).

19. Workmanship, good works, walk.

20. No.

21. Christ's.

22. C. All.

23. All, complete.

# Fullness Received

## *Lesson 12 – Scriptures*

**“And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness” (Eph. 4:24).**

**“In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise” (Eph. 1:13).**

**“By the which will we are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. . . . For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified” (Heb. 10:10 and 14)**

**“To the general assembly and church of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect” (Heb. 12:23).**

**“Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin; for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God” (1 John 3:9).**

**“Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us” (Heb. 9:12).**

**“Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?” (Rom. 6:16)**

**“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:24).**

**“For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace” (Rom. 6:14).**

**“To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in the beloved” (Eph. 1:6).**

**“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness” (1 John 1:9).**

**“But now being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye have your fruit unto holiness, and the end everlasting life” (Rom. 6:22).**

**“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them” (Eph. 2:10).**

**“Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? . . . For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord” (Rom. 8:35 and 38-39).**

**“And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace” (John 1:16).**





# God's Supernatural Faith

## Lesson 13

.....

In your spirit, you have the complete measure of faith. You don't need more faith from God, because you already have all you'll ever need. Your faith isn't small, immature, or in the process of growing; it's already as perfect and complete as the faith of Jesus. You just need to renew your mind and learn to release it!

When I first became serious about God, I started hungering to see in my life what I saw in the lives of Bible characters. When I read things in the Word, I knew they weren't just for the people back then. Even though I hadn't seen any of those things manifest prior to that time, I knew in my heart that they were for me now too. Since faith is what releases the supernatural ability of God, I began a quest to start operating in His kind of faith.

Of course, I misunderstood a number of things at first. I thought faith was something to be obtained. I believed that I had to do things after being saved in order to make God give me more faith. Because of this, I felt my faith was inadequate every time I came up against a problem. I just embraced such recurring thoughts as *Faith works, but I just don't have enough of it* and *What I've got is too puny!* That was my attitude. However, through this revelation of spirit, soul, and body, the Lord cleared up my misunderstandings about faith and revolutionized my life and ministry!

### ***Faith Was a Gift Too!***

Sometimes a passage of Scripture becomes so familiar that you can only see one application of it. Unless you allow the Holy Spirit to shine additional light on that part of His Word, you'll be stuck with only the understanding you already have. I'm not suggesting reading something into God's Word that isn't there, but I am recommending that you stay humble before your Teacher—the Holy Spirit—as we take a closer look at some very familiar scriptures (John 14:26).

The way you were born again is the way you receive everything in the Christian life—by grace through faith.

**“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast”** (Eph. 2:8-9).

Salvation is everything God provided through Christ's atonement; it's not just when you first walk through God's door by receiving forgiveness of sins and a brand-new spirit. Salvation is everything in His house as well—healing, deliverance, prosperity, joy, peace, love, anything you receive from Him. All these salvation benefits come the same way you were born again—by grace through faith!

Colossians 2:6 agrees, declaring:

**“As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him.”**

How did you receive Christ? By grace through faith. How, then, do you walk in Him and enjoy all the benefits of His salvation package? By grace through faith!

Many people interpret Ephesians 2:8 too narrowly by limiting the word “saved” to mean only the initial born-again experience. However, the Greek word for salvation here is “sozo,” which includes every aspect of salvation. Therefore, Ephesians 2:8 really says this:

**“For by grace are ye saved [sozo—forgiven of sins, born again, made righteous, healed, delivered, prospered, etc.] through faith”** (brackets mine).

Others miss the fact that it’s not only salvation that is “not of yourselves” (Eph. 2:8); it’s also faith as well. God not only provides the salvation you need, but He also supplies the very faith you use to appropriate His grace! Both salvation and the faith to receive it are gifts from God!

### *God’s Word Contains His Faith*

You can’t receive salvation without hearing the Word.

**“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God”** (Rom. 10:17).

You might not hear it quoted chapter and verse, but the truths and concepts that are in God’s Word must come across your path somehow. You need to know that Jesus died for your sins and that, because of His love, He offers forgiveness independent of your actions. His only demand is that you believe.

Faith comes through hearing the Word. How? God’s Word contains His faith. When you receive the Word into your heart, you’re receiving God’s supernatural faith. You must hear the Word because that’s how you believe and receive.

God put His faith in His words. When those words are preached, they contain faith. If you will open up your heart, that faith will enter in and produce salvation (1 Pet. 1:23-25). The faith you use to receive salvation is not mere human faith but God’s own supernatural faith, which came to you through His Word.

It’s important to know whether your faith is natural or supernatural. If you believe that your faith is just human faith, the devil will be able to convince you that it’s not very good. He’ll tell you it’s puny, weak, frail, and small in amount and strength. But when you understand that the faith you’re using is God’s supernatural faith, which was imparted to you through His Word, your level of confidence and expectation will rise. It’s not only the faith you used to become born again, but it’s the faith you use to appropriate everything in the Christian life!

Since God’s faith is a supernatural faith, it produces supernatural results. It has the ability to do things that will take you beyond just the physical realm. If you believe you’re using just human faith for the Christian life, you’ll only be able to receive natural results. However, when you realize that it’s God’s faith you’re using, you’ll start experiencing supernatural results!

## *Human Faith*

Human faith is based upon natural knowledge. God created mankind as faith beings. Even before being born again and separate from the influence of God, there's still a natural kind of faith. In an attempt to explain faith, this was what my church taught me while I was growing up.

Taking a chair, they'd say, "How do you know if this chair will hold you up? It takes faith to sit in it." Then they'd add, "It's faith when you drive through a green light. You must believe that the other side has a red light. You don't know it, because you can't see it, so you can't prove it. Even if the red is there, you still have to believe that the other cars will stop." And shifting to the skies, they'd say, "It's faith to ride in an airplane. You don't know how it works, and you aren't personally acquainted with the pilot. How can you be sure the mechanisms are correct and the pilot can work them?" They'd declare, "That's faith!"

It's a type of faith, but it's human faith. In other words, it's a faith based on sense knowledge—facts—things you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.

Whether you are conscious of it or not, the first thing you'd do before attempting to sit in the chair would be to glance over at it to see if it had all four legs. If it only had three legs and teetered like it was about to fall, you wouldn't sit in it. Whether you realize it or not, when you get ready to sit down in a chair, you inspect it. It might not be a perfect inspection, but you do gather some sense knowledge to base your action upon.

You've also been trained to know that when your side of the traffic light is green, the other side is red. You've got personal experience to base that upon because you've been on the other side waiting on the red many times before. However, for additional safety, you probably made sure nobody looked like they might speed through and run the light before you proceeded.

Human faith is limited to what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. If you noticed that one of the wings was missing, you wouldn't fly on that airplane. If you saw a wreck at the intersection, you wouldn't just go right on through it, even if the light was green. If the chair looked like it would fall apart under your weight, you wouldn't try to sit in it. If the facts don't seem to support the action, you can't act contrary when you are using natural faith.

## *Your Faith Is Supernatural!*

While human faith follows sense knowledge, supernatural faith precedes it. God demonstrated this kind of faith when He changed Abram's name to Abraham (father of many nations) before he even had a single child (Gen. 15:2-6 and 17:4-6).

**“(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were”** (Rom. 4:17).

This is how God's faith operates. He acknowledges those things that aren't yet manifest as if they already are. God calls those things as if they were, even before there is any physical proof of their existence. Natural faith can only acknowledge what it already sees, tastes, hears, smells, and

feels. Supernatural faith literally brings things into manifestation from the spirit realm. Now, that's a radical difference!

You used supernatural faith to become born again. It wasn't natural faith, because you were believing for things that were beyond your sense knowledge. Unless you had a vision or heard an audible voice, neither of which is the norm, you couldn't perceive spiritual truth with your natural senses. You had to believe in things you couldn't see, like heaven and hell, God and the devil, sin and forgiveness. All these were faith issues that could not be verified or proven by mere human faith. The Holy Spirit enlightened you from within as He spoke to your heart so you could take a step of faith that wasn't based on what you could see, taste, hear, smell, or feel. Through His Word, you were given God's supernatural faith when you were born again.

The same faith you used to become born again is now always present in your spirit. It doesn't evaporate, diminish, or get old and lose its power. That supernatural faith is exactly the same in your born-again spirit as it was the very moment you were saved. You may not be experiencing that faith and all of its benefits in your body and soul, but it's there in your spirit. If you've been born again, you already have the supernatural faith of God!

Faith is a fruit that stems from your spirit.

**“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, *faith*, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law”** (Gal. 5:22-23, emphasis mine).

Faith—belief—is a product from deep within the heart, not just the mind.

**“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness”** (Rom. 10:10a).

For the born-again believer, faith has actually been put into your recreated spirit!

You don't need more faith. You just need to believe that you already have it. As Jesus is now, so are you in this world (1 John 4:17). Is Jesus in faith? Of course He is! He's operating in faith perfectly. Your born-again spirit has the faith of God in it perfectly, without lack or inadequacy. Acknowledge it! Go to God's Word and discover the laws that govern how faith works. Then start cooperating and using them to your advantage. You'll find that the faith that's already inside you is more than sufficient for any problem you'll ever face!

# God's Supernatural Faith

## Lesson 13 – Outline

1. In your spirit, you have the complete measure of faith.
  - A. You don't need more faith from God, because you already have all you'll ever need.
  - B. Your faith isn't small, immature, or in the process of growing; it's already as perfect and complete as the faith of Jesus.
  - C. You just need to renew your mind and learn to release it.
2. The way you were born again is the way you receive everything in the Christian life—by grace through faith.

**“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast” (Eph. 2:8-9).**

- A. Salvation is everything God provided through Christ's atonement—forgiveness of sins, healing, deliverance, prosperity, joy, peace, love, etc.
- B. All these salvation benefits come the same way you were born again—by grace through faith.

**“As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him” (Col. 2:6).**

- C. God not only provides the salvation you need, but He also supplies the very faith you use to appropriate His grace.
- D. Both salvation and the faith to receive it are gifts from God.

3. You can't receive salvation without hearing the Word.

**“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Rom. 10:17).**

- A. God's Word contains His faith.
- B. When you receive the Word into your heart, you're receiving God's supernatural faith.
- C. The faith you use to receive salvation is not mere human faith but God's own supernatural faith, which came to you through His Word.
- D. It's not only the faith you used to become born again, but it's the faith you use to appropriate everything in the Christian life.

4. Human faith is based upon natural knowledge.
  - A. It's a faith based on sense knowledge—facts.
  - B. Human faith is limited to what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.
  - C. If the facts don't seem to support the action, you can't act contrary when you are using natural faith.

5. While human faith follows sense knowledge, supernatural faith precedes it.

- A. God acknowledges those things that aren't yet manifest as if they already are.

**“(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were”** (Rom. 4:17).

- B. Natural faith can only acknowledge what it already sees, tastes, hears, smells, and feels, but supernatural faith literally brings things into manifestation from the spirit realm.

6. The same faith you used to become born again is now always present in your spirit.

- A. Faith is a fruit that stems from your spirit.

**“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, *faith*, Meekness, temperance: against such things there is no law”** (Gal. 5:22-23, emphasis mine).

- B. Faith—belief—is a product from deep within the heart, not just the mind.

**“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness”** (Rom. 10:10a).

- C. As you cooperate with the laws that govern how faith works, you'll find that the faith that's already inside you is more than sufficient for any problem you'll ever face.

# God's Supernatural Faith

## *Lesson 13 – Teacher's Guide*

1. In our spirits, we have the complete measure of faith. We don't need more faith from God, because we already have all we'll ever need. Our faith isn't small, immature, or in the process of growing; it's already as perfect and complete as the faith of Jesus. We just need to renew our minds and learn to release it.
2. The way we were born again is the way we receive everything in the Christian life—by grace through faith (Eph. 2:8-9). Salvation is everything God provided through Christ's atonement—forgiveness of sins, healing, deliverance, prosperity, joy, peace, love, etc. All these salvation benefits come the same way we were born again—by grace through faith (Col. 2:6). God not only provides the salvation we need, but He also supplies the very faith we use to appropriate His grace. Both salvation and the faith to receive it are gifts from God.
3. We can't receive salvation without hearing the Word (Rom. 10:17). God's Word contains His faith. When we receive the Word into our hearts, we're receiving God's supernatural faith. The faith we use to receive salvation is not mere human faith but God's own supernatural faith, which came to us through His Word. It's not only the faith we used to become born again, but it's the faith we use to appropriate everything in the Christian life.

1. A. Where do we have the complete measure of faith? (In our spirits)  
B. Is our faith small, immature, or in the process of growing? (No, it's already as perfect and complete as the faith of Jesus)  
C. Then why aren't we seeing better results? (We need to renew our minds and learn to release it)
2. A. According to Ephesians 2:8-9, how were we born again? (By grace through faith)  
B. How, then, do we receive everything else in the Christian life? (The same way—by grace through faith)  
C. What do these verses say are gifts from God? (Both salvation and the faith to receive it)
3. A. Read Romans 10:17. What must we hear in order to receive salvation? (God's Word)  
B. How does God's supernatural faith come to us? (Through His Word)  
C. Besides being born again, what else do we use this faith for? (Everything in the Christian life)

4. Human faith is based upon natural knowledge. It's a faith based on sense knowledge—facts. Human faith is limited to what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. If the facts don't seem to support the action, we can't act contrary when we are using natural faith.
5. While human faith follows sense knowledge, supernatural faith precedes it. God acknowledges those things that aren't yet manifest as if they already are (Rom. 4:17). Natural faith can only acknowledge what it already sees, tastes, hears, smells, and feels, but supernatural faith literally brings things into manifestation from the spirit realm.
6. The same faith we used to become born again is now always present in our spirits. Faith is a fruit that stems from our spirits (Gal. 5:22-23). Faith—belief—is a product from deep within the heart, not just the mind (Rom. 10:10). As we cooperate with the laws that govern how faith works, we'll find that the faith that's already inside us is more than sufficient for any problem we'll ever face.

\

4. A. What do we call faith that is based upon natural, sense knowledge? (Human faith)  
B. Can this kind of faith act contrary to the facts—what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel? (No)
5. A. According to Romans 4:17, God does what? (He acknowledges those things that aren't yet manifest as if they already are)  
B. What does supernatural faith do with things in the spirit realm? (It literally brings them into manifestation)
6. A. What does Galatians 5:22-23 reveal about faith? (It's a fruit that stems from our born-again spirits)  
B. According to Romans 10:10, does faith proceed out of our hearts or just our minds? (Hearts)



# God's Supernatural Faith

## *Lesson 13 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to Ephesians 2:8-9, what is the gift of God?
  - A. Grace.
  - B. Salvation.
  - C. Faith.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
2. How do we receive God's gift of salvation?
3. Can we do anything to earn God's gifts?
4. What does Colossians 2:6 reveal about the Christian life?
5. Putting Ephesians 2:8-9 together with Colossians 2:6, how, then, do we receive everything else in the Christian life?
6. What does Colossians 2:6 call this?
7. According to Romans 10:17, what comes by hearing the Word of God?
8. What tense is the verb "hearing" in?
  - A. Past.
  - B. Present.
  - C. Future.
9. In light of this, how do we keep our faith in the present tense today?
10. What does God's Word contain?
11. According to Romans 4:17, how does God release His faith?
12. What was Abraham's part in cooperating with God?
13. What are the fruits of the Spirit listed in Galatians 5:22-23?
14. Is there any law against such things?

15. Why not?

16. According to Romans 10:10, is faith a product of our hearts or just our minds?

# God's Supernatural Faith

## *Lesson 13 – Answer Key*

1. D. All of the above.
2. By grace through faith.
3. No.
4. We walk in Christ the very same way we received Him.
5. The same way we received salvation—by grace through faith.
6. Walking in Him.
7. Faith.
8. B. Present.
9. By keeping our hearts open to hearing the Word each new day.
10. His supernatural faith.
11. He calls those things that be not as though they were.
12. Abraham believed the word from God he had heard.
13. Love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, and temperance.
14. No.
15. Because these character traits are the very expression of the nature of God Himself.
16. Our hearts.

# God's Supernatural Faith

## *Lesson 13 – Scriptures*

**“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (John 14:26).**

**“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast” (Eph. 2:8-9).**

**“As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him” (Col. 2:6).**

**“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God” (Rom. 10:17).**

**“Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. For all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass. The grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away: But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you” (1 Pet. 1:23-25).**

**“And Abram said, Lord God, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And Abram said, Behold, to me thou hast given no seed: and, lo, one born in my house is mine heir. And, behold, the word of the LORD came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but he that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir. And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him, So shall thy seed be. And he believed in the LORD; and he counted it to him for righteousness” (Gen. 15:2-6).**

**“As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations. Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee. And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee” (Gen. 17:4-6).**

**“(As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, even God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were” (Rom. 4:17).**

**“But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law” (Gal. 5:22-23).**

**“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation” (Rom. 10:10).**

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world” (1 John 4:17).**

# Like Precious Faith

## Lesson 14



You were justified by the faith of Christ.

**“Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by *the faith of Jesus Christ*, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by *the faith of Christ*, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified”** (Gal. 2:16, emphasis mine).

God not only provided salvation but also gave you the faith to receive it. You were so bound up in sin before being born again that you couldn’t reach out in your own ability to receive the salvation God had already purchased for you. Your mind and heart were simply too corrupted to believe. This sin-caused blindness separated you from God. He pierced through your darkness by speaking His Word to you through someone. God’s supernatural faith came with it. Then, when you embraced that Word in your heart, you used His faith to receive His gift of salvation.

Not only were you born again through that faith, but you’re to live your entire Christian life by it!

**“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh *I live by the faith of the Son of God*, who loved me, and gave himself for me”** (Gal. 2:20, emphasis mine).

It doesn’t say “I’m living by faith in the Son of God” but rather “I’m living by the faith of *the Son of God*.” (I am aware that several modern translations render it “I live by faith *in* the Son of God,” but that’s not accurate according to the Greek.) Just a few verses earlier, in 2:16, Paul stated twice that we are justified by the faith of Christ. It’s very clear that it’s not just a human faith that receives from God but His own supernatural faith.

### ***Knowledge Problem***

The first step is to believe you have this faith, but the goal is to release its benefits into your soul and body. Just like everything else in your spirit, your faith doesn’t fluctuate because of your performance. You were born again, apart from your works, using the supernatural faith of God. Now, that faith is always there. Your faith begins to operate, work, and become effective when you acknowledge the good things that are in you in Christ (Philem. 6). Acknowledge that God has already given you His supernatural faith!

You don’t have a faith deficiency; you have a knowledge problem. You don’t know what you’ve got. You haven’t learned the laws that govern faith or how to cooperate with them. If you don’t acknowledge this faith and learn how to use it, then you won’t see it manifest. It won’t be because you don’t have it, but because you’re ignorant of how it works!

Every born-again believer has been given *the* measure of faith.

**“For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man *the measure of faith*”**  
(Rom. 12:3, emphasis mine).

Some people teach and some Bible versions actually translate this incorrectly, saying *a* measure of faith. However, Galatians 2:16 and 20 both verify that this is truly *the* measure of faith.

You received the exact same quantity and quality of faith when you were born again as did every other Christian. However, in God’s “soup line,” most people think He dishes out faith using a wide variety of different measures. Someone’s given a ladle full, another a teaspoon. To this one, a tablespoon, and to that one, barely a drop. Romans 12:3 soundly refutes this false perception. In reality, everyone’s given the ladle full, because it’s *the* measure of faith!

Looking on externals, there’s no doubt some people operate in more faith than others. You might think, *They’ve got more faith than I do!* No, they just have more of it out in the physical realm. In other words, they are using more of their measure of faith than you are. Let’s say you and I were both given identical gift cards worth \$1,000 each. I buy an \$800 stereo system, and you purchase a \$200 leather coat. Even though we were given the exact same measure initially, according to our use, we experience very different results.

### ***Peter, Paul & You***

Paul used the faith of Jesus. In Galatians 2:20, he basically stated, “I’m living by the same faith that Jesus used when He walked on this earth.” Romans 12:3 reveals that there aren’t varying measures or different amounts. So, if Paul lived by the faith of the Son of God, then that means every other born-again believer like him also has the faith of the Son of God. What a radical truth!

When you were born again, you were given the faith of Jesus Christ. Even if you don’t yet understand how to release it, just the knowledge that it’s there and its potential would give you all the motivation you need to not quit until you see it manifest. If you could just grasp what I’m sharing, your expectation level would shoot through the roof.

Peter had this faith.

**“Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ”** (2 Pet. 1:1).

Peter wrote this letter to a group of believers who had already obtained this “like precious faith.” It wasn’t something they were searching for or seeking after; they already had it. Did they receive this faith by being holy and doing things? No, it came “through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.” When you were born again, you also received this “like precious faith.”

Peter released his faith and manifested many awesome things. He walked on water in the midst of a raging storm (Matt. 14:29). He preached and saw 3,000 people born again on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2:37-41). Peter healed the lame beggar at the temple gate (Acts 3:6-7). His shadow fell on people who were instantly made whole as he walked down the street (Acts 5:15-16). He also raised Dorcas from the dead (Acts 9:36-41). This is he who said you have like precious faith!

If you don't believe that you have this faith, then you might as well tear 2 Peter right out of your Bible, because it doesn't apply to you! It's specifically written to believers with "like precious faith." Peter wasn't operating in his own human faith. It wasn't because he was an apostle and had walked with Jesus that he was endued with such faith. Like Paul, Peter had been given the measure of faith upon being born again. He was living his life by the faith of the Son of God—and you can too!

### *Only Americans*

You have the same faith as Jesus! You might not have all of it operating the way He did, but it's there. Your soul, like a filter, screens what flows out from your spirit into the physical realm. All of your thoughts and concepts that are contrary to the revelation of God's Word block the flow. The fact is, if your thoughts are really messed up, very little of what's in your spirit will be able to pass through your soul and manifest. That's why you may not be seeing much happen as far as actions and results. However, as you continue renewing your mind, more of God's supernatural faith that's in you will be free to manifest!

I've experienced a tremendous increase of God's faith manifest in my life. Although I'm not a perfect example, I've seen people rise from the dead. Blind eyes and deaf ears have literally opened right before my eyes. The gifts of the Holy Spirit have been able to flow through me far beyond anything I could have ever perceived in the natural realm. Through a word of knowledge, I've actually told individuals their names before. I've also accurately perceived in my spirit different people's sicknesses and diseases, what's going on in their marriages, etc. It takes faith to do such things. I don't manifest it perfectly, but I've seen such an increase that I can tell you about the positive results I've experienced, all because I've believed that I already have God's supernatural faith. I'm not trying to get more faith—I'm just learning to release what I already have!

When asked on television "Why do you see so many more healings in less developed countries than here in the United States? Is it because they have more faith?" Reinhard Bonnke, renowned German world healing evangelist with a special passion for Africa, answered, "That's an invalid question!" He clarified his assertion by adding, "Americans are the only people on the face of the earth that I have encountered who have this concept of 'more faith' and 'little faith.' In other countries, either you believe or you don't! Only Americans believe in varying degrees and having to hit level ten, twenty, or whatever before their faith starts to work. Really, this idea violates what Jesus taught in Matthew 17:20. He said that if your faith was like a grain of mustard seed, you could tell a mountain to move and it would obey you. You could just speak to it, and your faith would work!"

What a difference this revelation will make in your life! You can now honestly and boldly declare:

***“I was given the measure of faith from Jesus at salvation. The faith of Christ is in me—no more and no less than any other born-again believer. The same faith Jesus used to raise Lazarus from the dead is available to me right now. It’s just a matter of renewing my mind, because in my spirit, I’ve got the same power, anointing, and potential. From this day forward, I expect to see an increase of manifestation in my life to the glory of God! Amen!”***



# Like Precious Faith

## Lesson 14 – Outline

1. You were justified by the faith of Christ.

**“Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by *the faith of Jesus Christ*, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by *the faith of Christ*, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified”** (Gal. 2:16, emphasis mine).

2. God not only provided salvation but also gave you the faith to receive it.

- A. Not only were you born again through that faith, but you’re to live your entire Christian life by it.

**“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh *I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me*”** (Gal. 2:20, emphasis mine).

- B. It’s not just a human faith that receives from God but His own supernatural faith.

3. The first step is to believe you have this faith, but the goal is to release its benefits into your soul and body.

- A. You don’t have a faith deficiency; you have a knowledge problem.

- B. If you don’t acknowledge this faith and learn how to use it, then you won’t see it manifest.

4. Every born-again believer has been given *the* measure of faith.

**“For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man *the measure of faith*”** (Rom. 12:3, emphasis mine).

- A. You received the exact same quantity and quality of faith when you were born again as did every other Christian.

- B. Some people are using more of their measure of faith than others.

5. Both Paul and Peter had this faith.

- A. If Paul lived by the faith of the Son of God, then that means every other born-again believer like him also has the faith of the Son of God (Gal. 2:20 and Rom. 12:3).

B. Second Peter was written to a group of believers who had already obtained this “like precious faith.”

**“Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ” (2 Pet. 1:1).**

C. Paul and Peter lived their lives by the faith of the Son of God—and you can too.

6. You have the same faith as Jesus.

A. You might not have all of it operating the way He did, but it’s there.

B. Your soul, like a filter, screens what flows out from your spirit into the physical realm.

C. As you continue renewing your mind, more of God’s supernatural faith that’s in you will be free to manifest.

# Like Precious Faith

## Lesson 14 – Teacher’s Guide

1. We were justified by the faith of Christ (Gal. 2:16).
2. God not only provided salvation but also gave us the faith to receive it. Not only were we born again through that faith, but we’re to live our entire Christian lives by it (Gal. 2:20). It’s not just a human faith that receives from God but His own supernatural faith.
3. The first step is to believe we have this faith, but the goal is to release its benefits into our bodies and souls. We don’t have a faith deficiency; we have a knowledge problem. If we don’t acknowledge this faith and learn how to use it, then we won’t see it manifest.
4. Every born-again believer has been given *the* measure of faith (Rom. 12:3). We received the exact same quantity and quality of faith when we were born again as did every other Christian. Some people are using more of their measure of faith than others.
5. Both Paul and Peter had this faith. If Paul lived by the faith of the Son of God, then that means every other born-again believer like him also has the faith of the Son of God (Gal. 2:20 and Rom. 12:3). Second Peter was written to a group of believers who had already obtained this “like precious faith” (2 Pet. 1:1). Paul and Peter lived their lives by the faith of the Son of God—and we can too.
6. We have the same faith as Jesus. We might not have all of it operating the way He did, but it’s there. Our souls, like a filter, screen what flows out from our spirits into the physical realm. As we continue renewing our minds, more of God’s supernatural faith that’s in us will be free to manifest.

1. A. Read Galatians 2:16. What were we justified by? (The faith of Christ)  
B. Whose faith was it? (Christ’s)
2. A. According to Galatians 2:20, are we only born again by this faith? (No, we’re to live our entire Christian lives by it)  
B. Is this a human faith or a supernatural faith? (God’s own supernatural faith)
3. A. Although the goal is to release its benefits into our bodies and souls, what is the first step? (Believe that we have this faith)  
B. What happens if we don’t acknowledge this faith and learn how to use it? (We won’t see it manifest)
4. A. According to Romans 12:3, what has every born-again believer been given? (*The* measure of faith)  
B. If every believer truly received the same quantity and quality of faith, why, then, are there differences? (Some people are using more of their measure of faith than others)
5. A. Besides Jesus, who else does the Bible reveal had this faith? (Both Paul and Peter)  
B. Read 2 Peter 1:1. Who was this letter written to? (Believers who had already obtained this “like precious faith.”)
6. A. We have the same faith as whom? (Jesus)  
B. What must we do before more of God’s supernatural faith that’s in us will be free to manifest? (Continue renewing our minds)

# Like Precious Faith

## *Lesson 14 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to Galatians 2:16, we are NOT justified—made righteous in God’s sight—by what?
2. How many times in this one verse is this point made?
3. What were we justified by?
4. How many times in this one verse is this point made?
5. When all is said and done, how many people will be justified—made righteous in God’s sight—by the works of the Law?
6. Read Galatians 2:20. Who were we crucified with?
7. Now that we’ve been crucified, who lives in and through us?
8. By what do we now live the life we live in the flesh?
9. What did Jesus do for us?
10. Compare Galatians 2:16 and 20 in the *King James Version* with the same verses in the version you tend to use the most. How are they the same? How are they different?
11. According to Philemon 6, what must we do to begin to see our faith work?
12. Read Romans 12:3. What does this verse tell us not to do?
13. What should we do instead?
14. Why should we think this way?
15. According to this verse, all Christians have:
  - A. No faith.
  - B. Some faith.
  - C. Varying degrees of faith.
  - D. The exact same quantity and quality of faith.
  - E. None of the above.

16. Read 2 Peter 1:1. Who was Peter writing to?
17. Was this faith something these people were searching for or seeking after?
18. Did they receive this faith by being holy and doing things?
19. How, then, did this faith come?
20. As Peter released his faith—the same precious faith we have—he manifested many awesome things. Fill in the blank after each scripture, listing something he did.
  - A. Matthew 14:29 \_\_\_\_\_
  - B. Acts 2:37-41 \_\_\_\_\_
  - C. Acts 3:6-7 \_\_\_\_\_
  - D. Acts 5:15-16 \_\_\_\_\_
  - E. Acts 9:36-41 \_\_\_\_\_
21. Read Matthew 17:20. What does Jesus compare faith to?
22. What did Jesus say that such faith could do?
23. What would be impossible?

# Like Precious Faith

## *Lesson 14 – Answer Key*

1. The works of the Law.
2. Three.
3. The faith of Jesus Christ.
4. Twice.
5. None.
6. Christ.
7. Christ.
8. The faith of the Son of God.
9. He loved us and gave Himself for us.
10. This will be your own answer.
11. We must acknowledge that God has already given us His supernatural faith.
12. We should not think more highly of ourselves than we ought.
13. We should think soberly.
14. Because God has dealt to every born-again believer the measure of faith.
15. D. The exact same quantity and quality of faith.
16. Those who have obtained “like precious faith.”
17. No, they had already obtained it.

18. No.
19. Through the righteousness of God and our Savior Jesus Christ.
20.
  - A. Matthew 14:29: Walked on water in the midst of a raging storm.
  - B. Acts 2:37-41: Preached and saw 3,000 born again on the Day of Pentecost.
  - C. Acts 3:6-7: Healed the lame beggar at the temple gate.
  - D. Acts 5:15-16: His shadow made people whole as he walked by on the street.
  - E. Acts 9:36-41: Raised Dorcas from the dead.
21. A grain of mustard seed.
22. Say to this mountain “Remove hence to yonder place,” and it would.
23. Nothing.

# Like Precious Faith

## *Lesson 14 – Scriptures*

**“Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified” (Gal. 2:16).**

**“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me” (Gal. 2:20).**

**“That the communication of thy faith may become effectual by the acknowledging of every good thing which is in you in Christ Jesus” (Philem. 6).**

**“For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith” (Rom. 12:3).**

**“Simon Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God and our Saviour Jesus Christ” (2 Pet. 1:1).**

**“And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus” (Matt. 14:29).**

**“Now when they heard this, they were pricked in their heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles, Men and brethren, what shall we do? Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call. And with many other words did he testify and exhort, saying, Save yourselves from this untoward generation. Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand souls” (Acts 2:37-41).**

**“Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk. And he took him by the right hand, and lifted him up: and immediately his feet and ankle bones received strength” (Acts 3:6-7).**

**“Insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them. There came also a multitude out of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed every one” (Acts 5:15-16).**



**“Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and almsdeeds which she did. And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them. Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them. But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning him to the body said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes: and when she saw Peter, she sat up. And he gave her his hand, and lifted her up, and when he had called the saints and widows, presented her alive” (Acts 9:36-41).**

**“And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you” (Matt. 17:20).**



# Your Spirit Knows All Things

## Lesson 15



Your born-again spirit came with the mind of Christ.

**“For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ”** (1 Cor. 2:16).

In your spirit, there’s a mind that already knows all things. The rest of the Christian life is learning how to draw it out into the physical realm. When that happens, you experience what’s called revelation knowledge.

You were born with a natural mind. It operates both in the soulish realm and in the physical realm as your brain. When you came into this world, you didn’t know anything. Your brain had some automatic functions that kicked in, like breathing, pumping blood, etc., but your mind had to be educated. You didn’t come out of the womb walking and talking. You had to train yourself to coordinate your muscles. This required lots of input!

When you were born again, you received the mind of Christ in your spirit. However, your spirit mind doesn’t have to be developed, trained, or taught, because it was born again in perfect knowledge.

You might be wondering, *What about 1 Corinthians 13:9-10, which talks about only knowing in part until that which is perfect is come?* That’s referring to your natural mind in your soulish realm. Right now, you don’t understand everything with your physical mind. You are in the process of renewing it, which won’t be complete until you receive that which is perfect—your glorified body. But in your spirit, you have the mind of Christ, which is already complete. It’s just not manifest in your limited little brain inside your skull!

Nobody can defend the erroneous position that 1 Corinthians 2:16 means you have the mind of Christ right now in your physical mind. There are things the Lord Jesus knows that you simply aren’t aware of in your natural mind. The Lord knew what He was saying in the Word, but you and I are still discovering the fullness of His meaning—even in just the Gospels alone! Nobody can claim total understanding and complete revelation, because no one’s actions and attitudes back it up.

### *Are You Double-Minded?*

Your spirit mind and physical mind are two separate entities within you. When they don’t agree, double-mindedness occurs.

**“Purify your hearts, ye double minded”** (James 4:8b).

The key to the Christian life is training your physical mind to agree with your spirit mind, which is the mind of Christ.

You are spirit, soul, and body. Your born-again spirit always agrees with God. Your body is under the influence of what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. When your natural mind thinks the same way as your spirit mind, you're single-minded. That's when you are believing with all your heart and you see God's power manifest. However, if your physical brain thinks contrary to your spirit mind, your experience will be different than the way your spirit thinks. Your soul—specifically your natural mind and the way you think—is the determining factor.

Your spirit mind always thinks the way God thinks. The Word perfectly represents what you think in your spirit. It's saying:

**“I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me”** (Phil. 4:13).

If your physical mind agrees, then you'll see supernatural power and ability flow through your soul into your body, which produces results in the physical realm. But if your mind is contrary, thinking, *I can't beat this sickness. I've known five people who've died of this same thing, and my doctor told me it's hopeless!* then you're double-minded. A double-minded person receives nothing from the Lord!

Single-mindedness brings stability, but double-mindedness causes instability.

**“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways”** (James 1:5-8).

The mind of Christ is in your spirit, but your soul doesn't automatically think that way. It takes effort to renew your physical mind to agree with your spirit mind. Basically, this is where the conflict in the Christian life is—in the mind.

### ***You Know All Things***

Most Christians believe that the only thing that changed when they became born again was their future—heaven instead of hell. After accepting Christ, they didn't see any change in their physical bodies, and they didn't automatically perceive it in their souls either, so they conclude that the real change must just be on paper. Nothing really changes until heaven, when everything will be awesome.

Yes, the change will be completed in heaven, but right now, one-third of you is already complete. Your spirit has the mind of Christ and knows all things. If you really believed this, you wouldn't be so easily pushed into defeat, whining, “I know God can do it, but I just don't understand the things of God!” Embracing your ignorance, you sing songs about someday it'll be better, but now “I'm just a poor wayfaring pilgrim.” Wailing and travailing, you glorify your infirmities, taking solace in the fact that “I'm just so inadequate. I can't experience victory until I go to be with the Lord.” That's not true! You just don't realize that in your spirit, you're already a brand-new person!

In your spirit, you know all things!

**“But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things”** (1 John 2:20).

“Unction” simply means an anointing, a special endowment of power, or an ability. The “Holy One” is Jesus.

People who don’t understand spirit, soul, and body read a verse like this and throw up their hands, saying, “The Bible is so hard to understand! I can prove by my last test score that I don’t know all things. I even forgot where I put my keys this morning. After walking into the room, I couldn’t remember why I was there. That proves I don’t know all things!” Those who only acknowledge their physical brain and soulish realm will never be able to embrace this truth from God’s Word.

However, 1 John 2:20 plainly reveals that you know all things. How can this be? In your spirit, you have the mind of Christ. The Greek word for “all” basically means to the exclusion of nothing. This means you not only know some things or many things but *all* things. In your spiritual mind, you know everything Jesus knows!

### ***The Road to Manifestation***

You’re probably asking, “That’s great, but what good does it do me? How do I get it out into the physical realm where I need it?”

First and foremost, you must believe you’ve already got it. You can’t release something you don’t really believe you have. If you waver regarding the truth that your born-again spirit has the mind of Christ and knows all things, then as you put forth effort in the process of releasing this, the devil will tempt you to think, *What that guy said isn’t true. The Word doesn’t mean that. This just doesn’t work!* Unless you’re absolutely convinced, you’ll get frustrated and quit before you see the manifestation. You must believe you have the mind of Christ in your born-again spirit, even if you mess up. That’s the first step.

Once you truly believe, you’re on the road to manifestation!

# Your Spirit Knows All Things

## Lesson 15 – Outline

1. Your born-again spirit came with the mind of Christ.

**“For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ” (1 Cor. 2:16).**

- A. In your spirit, there’s a mind that already knows all things.
- B. The rest of the Christian life is learning how to draw it out into the physical realm.
- C. When that happens, you experience what’s called revelation knowledge.

2. You were born with a natural mind.

- A. It operates both in the soulish realm and in the physical realm as your brain.
- B. Your natural mind had to be educated and trained.

3. When you were born again, you received the mind of Christ in your spirit.

- A. Your spirit mind doesn’t have to be developed, trained, or taught, because it was born again in perfect knowledge.
- B. First Corinthians 13:9-10 refers to your natural mind in your soulish realm not being totally renewed until you receive that which is perfect—your glorified body.
- C. The mind of Christ in your spirit is already complete.

4. Your spirit mind and physical mind are two separate entities within you.

- A. When they don’t agree, double-mindedness occurs.

**“Purify your hearts, ye double minded” (James 4:8b).**

- B. The key to the Christian life is training your physical mind to agree with your spirit mind, which is the mind of Christ.

5. Your spirit mind always thinks the way God thinks.

- A. The Word perfectly represents what you think in your spirit.
- B. If your physical mind agrees, then you’ll see supernatural power and ability flow through your soul into your body, which produces results in the physical realm.

C. If your physical mind disagrees, then you're double-minded and you will receive nothing from the Lord.

6. Single-mindedness brings stability, but double-mindedness causes instability.

**“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways”** (James 1:5-8).

A. The mind of Christ is in your spirit, but your soul doesn't automatically think that way.

B. It takes effort to renew your physical mind to agree with your spirit mind.

C. Basically, this is where the conflict in the Christian life is—in the mind.

7. In your spirit, you know all things.

**“But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things”** (1 John 2:20).

A. “Unction” simply means an anointing, a special endowment of power, or an ability.

B. The “Holy One” is Jesus.

C. “All” basically means to the exclusion of nothing.

D. In your spiritual mind, you know everything Jesus knows.

# Your Spirit Knows All Things

## *Lesson 15 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Our born-again spirits came with the mind of Christ (1 Cor. 2:16). In our spirits, there’s a mind that already knows all things. The rest of the Christian life is learning how to draw it out into the physical realm. When that happens, we experience what’s called revelation knowledge.
2. We were born with natural minds. They operate both in the soulish realm and in the physical realm as the brain. Our natural minds had to be educated and trained.
3. When we were born again, we received the mind of Christ in our spirits. Our spirit minds don’t have to be developed, trained, or taught, because they were born again in perfect knowledge. First Corinthians 13:9-10 refers to our natural minds in our soulish realm not being totally renewed until we receive that which is perfect—our glorified bodies. The mind of Christ in our spirits is already complete.
4. Our spirit minds and physical minds are two separate entities within us. When they don’t agree, double-mindedness occurs (James 4:8). The key to the Christian life is training our physical minds to agree with our spirit minds, which is the mind of Christ.

1. A. According to 1 Corinthians 2:16, what did our born-again spirits come with? (The mind of Christ)  
B. What happens when we draw this out into the physical realm? (We experience what’s called revelation knowledge)
2. Our natural minds operate in which two realms? (Our soulish realm and our physical realm)
3. A. Read 1 Corinthians 13:9-10. What are these verses referring to? (Our natural minds in our soulish realm not being totally renewed until we receive that which is perfect—our glorified bodies)  
B. Does the mind of Christ in our born-again spirits need to be developed, trained, or taught? (No, it’s already complete)
4. A. Read James 4:8. What happens when our spirit minds and physical minds don’t agree? (We’re double-minded)  
B. What is the key to the Christian life? (Training our physical minds to agree with our spirit minds, which is the mind of Christ)



5. Our spirit minds always think the way God thinks. The Word perfectly represents what we think in our spirits. If our physical minds agree, then we'll see supernatural power and ability flow through our souls into our bodies, which produces results in the physical realm. If our physical minds disagree, then we're double-minded and we will receive nothing from the Lord.
6. Single-mindedness brings stability, but double-mindedness causes instability (James 1:5-8). The mind of Christ is in our spirits, but our souls don't automatically think that way. It takes effort to renew our physical minds to agree with our spirit minds. Basically, this is where the conflict in the Christian life is—in the mind.
7. In our spirits, we know all things (1 John 2:20). "Unction" simply means an anointing, a special endowment of power, or an ability. The "Holy One" is Jesus. "All" basically means to the exclusion of nothing. In our spiritual minds, we know everything Jesus knows.

5. A. What perfectly represents the way we think in our born-again spirits? (The Word)  
B. If our physical minds agree with the Word, what happens? (Supernatural power and ability flows through our souls into our bodies, which produces results in the physical realm)  
C. If our physical minds disagree with the Word, what happens? (We receive nothing from the Lord)
6. A. According to James 1:5-8, what causes instability? (Double-mindedness)  
B. Where is the effort and conflict in the Christian life? (It's in renewing our physical minds to agree with our spirit minds)
7. A. Read 1 John 2:20. Who is the "Holy One"? (Jesus)  
B. Where do we know everything Jesus knows? (In our spiritual minds)

# **Your Spirit Knows All Things**

## *Lesson 15 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What does 1 Corinthians 2:16 reveal that we have?
2. In which part of our beings is this located?
  - A. Our spirits.
  - B. Our souls.
  - C. Our bodies.
3. What is 1 Corinthians 13:9-10 referring to?
4. What promise are we given in James 4:8?
5. Who should purify their hearts?
6. In order for someone to be double-minded, how many minds must they have?
  - A. One.
  - B. Two.
  - C. Three.
  - D. None.
7. According to Philippians 4:13, what can I do?
8. How?
9. What does James 1:5 instruct us to do when we lack wisdom?
10. What qualification does James 1:6 add?
11. What is a wavering person compared to?
12. According to James 1:7-8, can this wavering, double-minded person expect to receive anything from God?
13. If double-mindedness causes instability, what does single-mindedness cause?
14. How do we become single-minded?

15. First John 2:20 reveals that we have received what from the Holy One?
16. Do we know all things in our natural minds?
17. Then where do we know all things?

# **Your Spirit Knows All Things**

## *Lesson 15 – Answer Key*

1. The mind of Christ.
2. A. Our spirits.
3. Our natural minds in our soulish realm not being totally renewed until we receive that which is perfect—our glorified bodies.
4. If we draw nigh to God, He will draw nigh to us.
5. Anyone who is double-minded.
6. B. Two.
7. All things.
8. Through Christ who strengthens me.
9. Ask God for it.
10. We should ask in faith, not wavering.
11. A wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.
12. No.
13. Stability.
14. By renewing our natural minds to the Word so that they agree with the mind of Christ in our born-again spirits.
15. An unction.
16. No.
17. In our born-again spirits.

# **Your Spirit Knows All Things**

## *Lesson 15 – Scriptures*

**“For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ” (1 Cor. 2:16).**

**“For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away” (1 Cor. 13:9-10).**

**“Draw nigh to God, and he will draw nigh to you. Cleanse your hands, ye sinners; and purify your hearts, ye double minded” (James 4:8).**

**“I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me” Phil. 4:13).**

**“If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double minded man is unstable in all his ways” (James 1:5-8).**

**“But ye have an unction from the Holy One, and ye know all things” (1 John 2:20).**



# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## Lesson 16

.....

Studying God’s Word will draw out the wisdom that’s in your spirit. When you’re reading the Bible, you are receiving words with your physical eyes that are spirit and life. As you take this knowledge into your soul, new thoughts and ideas come to your physical mind. When this happens, your spirit—which already has the truth and mind of Christ—will bear witness with it.

Surely you’ve read a scripture and felt like all of a sudden you “saw” it. You may have read it a dozen, even a hundred times before, but all at once, everything within you shouts, “Yes!” That’s your spirit and your soul becoming of one mind. When your soulish realm gains a truth and begins to embrace it, your spirit connects and agrees. Once the connection is made, that truth just goes off inside of you. It’s now revelation and reality to you. Because of your inner witness, you don’t necessarily need anyone else to prove it; you just know!

Several scriptures reveal this inner witness.

**“The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God”** (Rom. 8:16).

First John 5:6-10 also describes this, specifically verse 10, which says:

**“He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself.”**

Studying God’s Word is vital for achieving single-mindedness and releasing God’s power! Your spirit mind, the mind of Christ, agrees completely with the Word. When a truth from God’s Word takes root in your soulish realm, that same knowledge, which has already existed in your spirit mind, rises up and meshes with it. This draws God’s power resident within you out into the physical realm. That’s when you see manifestation!

### *Your Spirit Prays!*

Praying in tongues is another powerful way to release the mind of Christ.

**“Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries”** (1 Cor. 14:1-2).

When you pray in the Spirit, you are speaking mysteries. And it’s your spirit that’s praying!

**“For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful”** (1 Cor. 14:14).

This scripture shows both minds in operation. When you pray in tongues, your spirit prays, but your understanding—your soulish, physical, natural mind—is unfruitful.

You build yourself up by praying in tongues.

**“He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself”** (1 Cor. 14:4a).

“Edify” means “the act of building . . . the promotion of spiritual growth” (*Vine’s Expository Dictionary*). It’s your soul that’s actually growing and being built up, because your spirit is already perfect and complete. The mind of Christ in your spirit prays when you pray in tongues.

Your goal is to facilitate single-mindedness. You aren’t trying to get the Word of God into your spirit, because the mind of Christ already knows all things. You are trying to get God’s Word into your soul so that your spirit can bear witness with it. As your soulish realm embraces a truth and agrees “Yes, God, this is what I believe. I’m throwing out all other contrary thoughts and belief systems. This truth will now rule my life,” you become of one mind. Your soul unites to your spirit’s way of thinking, and you’re built up by drawing your spirit’s wisdom and knowledge out into the physical realm. That’s when you’ll see God’s power manifest!

### *Hidden Wisdom*

When you pray in tongues, your spirit prays the hidden wisdom of God.

**“Howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries”** (1 Cor. 14:2b).

What are those mysteries?

**“The wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory”** (1 Cor. 2:7).

That’s what the Apostle Paul preached!

In 1 Corinthians 2, Paul described his preaching and wisdom. He didn’t just use his human intellect, but ministered God’s Word “in demonstration of the Spirit and of power” (1 Cor. 2:4). In the process of explaining this, Paul actually put down carnal knowledge (learned physical knowledge, the kind you receive from school) in favor of God’s wisdom. In other words, there’s a wisdom that proceeds from your born-again spirit (mind of Christ, 1 Cor. 2:16), and there’s a wisdom that comes from your physical brain (what somebody taught you). Since you cannot really understand the things of God with just your natural mind, you must understand them through your spirit man. It’s this wisdom that comes from your spirit that enables you to relate to God. Paul preached this wisdom as he invited unbelievers to believe and encouraged believers to mature.

Paul preached the hidden wisdom of God that he received by revelation. He declared:

**“I speak with tongues more than ye all”** (1 Cor. 14:18).



As Paul prayed in the spirit, he spoke forth God's mysteries and received revelation knowledge concerning them (1 Cor. 14:2). However, he did not preach or teach in tongues (1 Cor. 14:19). Paul ministered in his native language the wisdom he received through praying in tongues.

### *Inside Out*

Pray in tongues when you study God's Word. As you do, you'll release the mind of Christ into your soulish realm through revelation knowledge. I'm not advocating speaking in tongues and then just accepting whatever comes to mind as being from God. No, it should line up with the Word. God will supernaturally reveal things to you through His Word as a result of praying in tongues.

Revelation knowledge comes by the Holy Spirit inside your born-again spirit bearing witness in your soul with a truth from God's Word. You might be reading or listening to Scripture when it suddenly comes alive inside. That's revelation!

Simeon recognized the Christ child by revelation knowledge.

**“And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God”** (Luke 2:26-28).

No human could have told him these things. God revealed it to Simeon through his spirit.

Revelation knowledge comes from the inside out, not the outside in. You may be reading the Word, studying it, looking things up in the Greek, checking cross-references, and reading or listening to someone else's opinion of what the Word says. But then, all of a sudden, the mind of Christ in your born-again spirit just reaches up from inside and grabs that truth, shouting, “Yes! This one's true. This one is for you!” That's revelation knowledge.

### *Believe to Interpret*

When you pray in tongues, you can believe God for interpretation.

**“Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret”** (1 Cor. 14:13).

I admit that the context of this verse primarily addresses the need for interpretation of a publicly given tongue in a church service, but you can believe God for interpretation when you're praying in the spirit privately as well.

Praying in tongues benefits you whether you believe for interpretation or not. It relieves stress and releases the peace of God into your soul and body.

**“For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing” (Is. 28:11-12).**

It builds you up and promotes spiritual growth (1 Cor. 14:4). Since you are praying from the mind of Christ, why wouldn't you want to interpret?

I started interpreting my speaking in tongues a long time ago. When I first fell in love with the Lord, I went through an intense time of excitement, anointing, and stirring within, but my mind couldn't comprehend it. Then in Vietnam, I began seeing little glimmers of truth while studying the Bible. After returning home and marrying Jamie in October 1972, I really started poring over the Word. Scriptures began coming alive to me, and my spirit would rejoice. I'd read certain passages, and the spirit inside me just wanted to stand up and shout! However, since this was contrary to the religious way I'd been taught, I really struggled with it.

In my heart, I determined to break through. For an extended season of time, I spent six to ten hours a day writing scriptures out longhand on my legal pad. Along the way, I stopped and meditated on each individual word. Then I locked myself in the closet of our little apartment in Garland, Texas (a suburb of Dallas), to pray in tongues over these scriptures for an hour or two. My spirit already knew these truths, but as I prayed in tongues and asked God to interpret them to my mind so I could understand them, revelation came.

Understanding came as I wrote these scriptures out, meditated, prayed in tongues over them, and received interpretation. In fact, this revelation of spirit, soul, and body was one of the first things He showed me. Since my thinking had been so screwed up from religion and wrong teaching, it actually took a couple of months before I started making the connections. Then all of a sudden, in what seemed like one week's time, God started putting some of this together for me. I understood about eternal redemption and how God could love me. These truths exploded within and became reality to me. After about a week of this, the revelation was coming so fast and furious that I literally had to ask God to slow it down. I wanted to comprehend and retain it all without missing a single thing. One of the ways this happened was I prayed for interpretation!

Meditating God's Word, speaking in tongues, and receiving interpretation is the fast track to single-mindedness and manifestation!

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## *Lesson 16 – Outline*

1. Studying God's Word will draw out the wisdom that's in your spirit.
  - A. When you're reading the Bible, you are receiving words with your physical eyes that are spirit and life.
  - B. As you take this knowledge into your soul, new thoughts and ideas come to your physical mind.
  - C. When this happens, your spirit—which already has the truth and mind of Christ—will bear witness with it.
  - D. Several scriptures reveal this inner witness.

**“The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God” (Rom. 8:16).**

**“He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself” (1 John 5:10a).**

2. Studying God's Word is vital for achieving single-mindedness and releasing God's power.
  - A. When a truth from God's Word takes root in your soulish realm, that same knowledge, which has already existed in your spirit mind, rises up and meshes with it.
  - B. This draws God's power resident within you out into the physical realm.
3. Praying in tongues is another powerful way to release the mind of Christ.

**“Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries” (1 Cor. 14:1-2).**

- A. When you pray in tongues, your spirit prays.

**“For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful” (1 Cor. 14:14).**

- B. Your spirit prays, but your understanding—your soulish, physical, natural mind—is unfruitful.

4. You build yourself up by praying in tongues.

**“He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself” (1 Cor. 14:4a).**

- A. “Edify” means “the act of building . . . the promotion of spiritual growth” (*Vine’s Expository Dictionary*).
  - B. Your goal is to facilitate single-mindedness.
  - C. As your soul unites to your spirit’s way of thinking, you’re built up by drawing your spirit’s wisdom and knowledge out into the physical realm.
5. When you pray in tongues, your spirit prays the hidden wisdom of God.

**“Howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries”** (1 Cor. 14:2b).

**“The wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory”** (1 Cor. 2:7).

- A. Since you cannot really understand the things of God with just your natural mind, you must understand them through your spirit man.
  - B. Paul preached the hidden wisdom of God that he received by revelation (1 Cor. 2).
- “I speak with tongues more than ye all”** (1 Cor. 14:18).
6. Simeon recognized the Christ child by revelation knowledge.

**“And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord’s Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God”** (Luke 2:26-28).

- A. Revelation knowledge comes from the inside out, not the outside in.
  - B. The mind of Christ in your born-again spirit reaches up from inside and grabs that truth, shouting, “Yes! This one’s true. This one is for you!”
7. When you pray in tongues, you can believe God for interpretation.

**“Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret”** (1 Cor. 14:13).

- A. Whether you receive interpretation or not, praying in tongues relieves stress and releases the peace of God into your body and soul.

**“For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing”** (Is. 28:11-12).

- B. Since you are praying from the mind of Christ, why wouldn't you want to interpret?
- C. Meditating on God's Word, speaking in tongues, and receiving interpretation is the fast track to single-mindedness and manifestation.

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## Lesson 16 – Teacher’s Guide

1. Studying God’s Word will draw out the wisdom that’s in our spirits. When we’re reading the Bible, we are receiving words with our physical eyes that are spirit and life. As we take this knowledge into our souls, new thoughts and ideas come to our physical minds. When this happens, our spirits—which already have the truth and mind of Christ—will bear witness with it. Several scriptures reveal this inner witness (Rom. 8:16 and 1 John 5:10).
2. Studying God’s Word is vital for achieving single-mindedness and releasing God’s power. When a truth from God’s Word takes root in our soulish realm, that same knowledge, which has already existed in our spirit minds, rises up and meshes with it. This draws God’s power resident within us out into the physical realm.
3. Praying in tongues is another powerful way to release the mind of Christ (1 Cor. 14:1-2). When we pray in tongues, our spirits pray. However, our understanding—our soulish, physical, natural minds—are unfruitful (1 Cor. 14:14).
4. We build ourselves up by praying in tongues (1 Cor. 14:4). “Edify” means “the act of building . . . the promotion of spiritual growth” (*Vine’s Expository Dictionary*). Our goal is to facilitate single-mindedness. As our souls unite to our spirits’ way of thinking, we’re built up by drawing our spirits’ wisdom and knowledge out into the physical realm.

1. A. What is the primary way we draw out the wisdom that’s in our born-again spirits? (Studying God’s Word)  
B. As we take this knowledge into our souls, what do our spirits do according to Romans 8:16 and 1 John 5:10? (Bear witness with it)
3. A. In addition to studying and meditating God’s Word, what does 1 Corinthians 14:2 reveal as another powerful way to release the mind of Christ? (Praying in tongues)  
B. According to 1 Corinthians 14:14, do our natural minds understand what we’re saying when we pray in tongues? (No)
4. A. What does 1 Corinthians 14:4 tell us about praying in tongues? (When we pray in the Spirit, we’re building ourselves up spiritually)  
B. Our goal for praying in tongues is \_\_\_\_\_. (To facilitate single-mindedness)

5. When we pray in tongues, our spirits pray the hidden wisdom of God (1 Cor. 14:2 and 2:7). Since we cannot really understand the things of God with just our natural minds, we must understand them through our spirit man. Paul preached the hidden wisdom of God that he received by revelation (1 Cor. 2 and 14:18).
6. Simeon recognized the Christ child by revelation knowledge (Luke 2:26-28). Revelation knowledge comes from the inside out, not the outside in. When we're reading the Bible, studying, or listening to someone else's opinion of what the Word says, the mind of Christ in our born-again spirits will reach up from inside and grab that truth, shouting, "Yes! This one's true. This one is for you!" That's revelation knowledge.
7. When we pray in tongues, we can believe God for interpretation (1 Cor. 14:13). Whether we receive interpretation or not, praying in tongues relieves stress and releases the peace of God into our bodies and souls (Is. 28:11-12). Since we are praying from the mind of Christ, why wouldn't we want to interpret? Meditating God's Word, speaking in tongues, and receiving interpretation is the fast track to single-mindedness and manifestation.

5. A. According to 1 Corinthians 14:2 and 2:7, what are we praying when we pray in tongues? (The hidden wisdom of God)  
B. Who preached the hidden wisdom of God that he had received by revelation? (Paul)
6. A. Who did Simeon recognize by revelation in Luke 2:26-28? (The Christ child)  
B. Does revelation knowledge come from the inside out or the outside in? (The inside out)
7. A. According to 1 Corinthians 14:13, what can we believe God for when we pray in tongues? (Interpretation)  
B. Isaiah 28:11-12 reveals that praying in tongues does what? (Relieves stress and releases the peace of God into our bodies and souls)

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## *Lesson 16 – Additional Information*

First Corinthians 2:9 is often misused. It says:

**“But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him.”**

Many people read that and say, “This contradicts what you’re teaching. It shows that you can’t really know the things of God. This verse proves that He’s mysterious and you can’t really know!”

Don’t stop there! Keep reading the next few verses:

***“But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. . . . We have the mind of Christ”***

(1 Cor. 2:10-12 and 16b, emphasis mine).

First Corinthians 2:9 contrasts Old Testament saints, who couldn’t understand, with New Covenant believers, who know all things in their spirits! In this verse, Paul quoted an Old Testament scripture (Is. 64:4). Old Covenant people weren’t born again, so they didn’t have born-again spirits. Because of this, it’s totally accurate to say that they couldn’t understand the things of God. To them, it was foolishness because they have to be spiritually discerned (1 Cor. 2:14). However, it’s inaccurate to say the same thing about a New Testament believer who has the mind of Christ in their born-again spirit. You can understand the things of God!

### ***Disaster or Safety?***

Just because you pray in tongues and ask God for interpretation doesn’t mean you should accept any and every thought that comes to your mind as being from God. That’s a recipe for disaster! You must judge every thought by the Word of God. The Spirit and the Word always agree (1 John 5:7). They never disagree, because God’s Word never contradicts spiritual truth. Whether you are praying in tongues and believing for interpretation or not, whenever thoughts that are contrary to the Word flash across your mind, you should immediately conclude “That’s not God!”

Paul rebuked the Corinthians for using the gifts of the Holy Spirit carnally. His comments in 1 Corinthians 12, 13, and 14 were corrections regarding the proper use of the gifts, especially speaking in tongues. Therefore, just because you are praying in tongues doesn’t guarantee that they are completely pure and fully inspired by the Holy Spirit. Your flesh could be a factor.



However, if you stay within these biblical boundaries, you'll be able to safely receive much revelation from the Lord. As you pray in tongues and ask for interpretation, thoughts will come, and all of a sudden you'll say, "I've never seen that before!" Then, as you verify it in more than just one obscure place in the Bible, it'll become an obvious truth to you.

Basically, you need to know God's Word to be able to do this. This may not be the way an immature Christian should operate. I was spending six to ten hours a day studying the Scriptures and then one or two hours praying in tongues for revelation. I don't think you ought to spend one hour studying the Word and then many hours praying in tongues. It ought to be the opposite—many hours in the Word. Through this, God has revealed many things to me!

These truths on spirit, soul, and body came through God's Word. Everything I share, I share from Scripture. But the reason these verses and passages have come alive and impacted my life in ways they might not have (yet) for you is because I mixed my Scripture meditation with praying in tongues.

For additional information, my single teaching entitled "Revelation Knowledge" goes much further in depth on this topic. I elaborate on many things that I've only been able to touch on here, including how to interpret, checks and balances, etc.

Also, if you would like to know more about the baptism in the Holy Spirit, I highly recommend my teaching entitled *The New You & The Holy Spirit*. This study of God's Word will answer your questions, address any hindrances, and show you how to receive this wonderful, powerful gift God has for you.

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## *Lesson 16 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Read Romans 8:16. Who bears witness with our spirits?
2. What does He bear witness about?
3. According to 1 John 5:10, where is the witness for the person who has believed on the Son of God?
4. What does 1 Corinthians 14:1 say we are to follow after?
5. What does 1 Corinthians 14:1 say we are to desire?
6. According to 1 Corinthians 14:2, when we speak in tongues, are we speaking to men or to God?
7. When we speak in tongues, what are we speaking?
8. According to 1 Corinthians 14:14, what part of our beings is praying when we pray in tongues?
9. When we pray in tongues, our understanding is \_\_\_\_\_.
10. What does 1 Corinthians 14:4 say we are doing when we speak in tongues?
11. According to 1 Corinthians 2:7, these mysteries that we are speaking are what?
12. How did the Apostle Paul describe his ministry in 1 Corinthians 2:4?
13. According to 1 Corinthians 2:16, who has the mind of Christ?
14. Why did Paul thank God in 1 Corinthians 14:18?
15. According to 1 Corinthians 14:19, did Paul preach in tongues?
16. What was revealed to Simeon in Luke 2:26?
17. Who revealed this to him?

18. What does 1 Corinthians 14:13 say that we are to pray for?
19. According to Isaiah 28:11-12, how does praying in tongues benefit us?
20. In light of 1 John 5:7, do the Word and the Holy Spirit ever disagree?

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## *Lesson 16 – Answer Key*

1. The Holy Spirit.
2. That we are the children of God.
3. In oneself.
4. Charity—God’s kind of love.
5. Spiritual gifts.
6. To God.
7. Mysteries.
8. Our spirits.
9. Unfruitful.
10. We’re edifying ourselves—building ourselves up spiritually.
11. The hidden wisdom of God.
12. His preaching wasn’t with enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power.
13. We do.
14. He spoke in tongues more than them all.
15. No, he ministered in his native language the wisdom he had received through praying in tongues.
16. That he wouldn’t see death before he had seen the Lord’s Christ.
17. The Holy Spirit.

18. That we may interpret the tongues we are speaking.

19. We are rested and refreshed.

20. No.

# Releasing the Mind of Christ

## *Lesson 16 – Scriptures*

**“The Spirit itself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God” (Rom. 8:16).**

**“This is he that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these three are one. And there are three that bear witness in earth, the spirit, and the water, and the blood: and these three agree in one. If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater: for this is the witness of God which he hath testified of his Son. He that believeth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself: he that believeth not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son” (1 John 5:6-10).**

**“Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries” (1 Cor. 14:1-2).**

**“Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret. For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful” (1 Cor. 14:13-14).**

**“He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church” (1 Cor. 14:4).**

**“But we speak the wisdom of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisdom, which God ordained before the world unto our glory” (1 Cor. 2:7).**

**“And my speech and my preaching was not with enticing words of man’s wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of power” (1 Cor. 2:4).**

**“But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him. But God hath revealed them unto us by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the spirit which is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God. . . . For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ” (1 Cor. 2:9-12 and 16).**

**“I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all: Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue” (1 Cor. 14:18-19).**

**“And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord’s Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, Then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God” (Luke 2:26-28).**

**“For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear” (Is. 28:11-12).**

**“For since the beginning of the world men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O God, beside thee, what he hath prepared for him that waiteth for him” (Is. 64:4).**

**“But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned” (1 Cor. 2:14).**





# Empowerment Required

## Lesson 17



God has imparted perfect wisdom and complete revelation into your born-again spirit.

**“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding” (Prov. 4:7).**

Wisdom and understanding are keys that will unlock anything else in life you need. Therefore, draw on that wisdom and receive understanding so the floodgates of your soul will open up to allow God’s truths already in your spirit to manifest in the physical realm. Yes, you can live a fruitful and fulfilled Christian life!

Without the empowerment of the Holy Spirit, you won’t be able to fully release all of these wonderful realities already present in your born-again spirit. That’s why the baptism in the Holy Spirit is so important!

Jesus needed the baptism in the Holy Spirit! He was born as God in His spirit and as man in His soul and body. He was complete in His spirit while on the earth in His physical body. However, Jesus didn’t do any miracles until He received the baptism in the Holy Spirit (Luke 3:21-22; 4:1,14; and thereafter).

Since the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit are One, they don’t operate independent of each other. The Holy Spirit is the one who releases the wisdom and revelation of God. He comforts, teaches, and reminds.

**“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (John 14:26).**

He guides into all truth, listens, speaks, shows things to come, glorifies Jesus, and receives of Him and shows it by revelation to you!

**“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you” (John 16:12-14).**

Apart from the Holy Spirit, you won’t have access to all that God has placed within you!

***Receive His Spirit & Pray in Tongues!***

When you receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit, the ability to pray in tongues comes with it. As you pray in the Spirit, you draw on and release the wisdom that’s in the born-again part of you.

It's not the only way, but it's certainly one of the primary ways. Therefore, it's essential that you receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit!

The baptism in the Holy Spirit is a second, separate experience from salvation. You are endowed with power by the Holy Ghost and the gift of speaking in tongues, which will help you operate this power. When you pray in tongues, you build yourself up, but it's much more than just an emotional lift. It helps you release the wisdom of God within you. Even if there were no other results (which there are), that would certainly be enough! Speaking in tongues produces tremendous spiritual benefits!

Some groups overemphasize speaking in tongues when people first receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit and underemphasize the benefits to the Christian life thereafter. Due to this, many who have received the baptism in the Holy Spirit only spoke in tongues once or twice to prove they had it. However, they didn't know there were other benefits, so they haven't really used the gift since. They also have been missing out on the tremendous benefits speaking in tongues brings to their daily lives.

If you aren't baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues, you're really missing out. In fact, you're probably frustrated and powerless in your Christian life. Receiving the Holy Spirit will help you experience His love more than ever before and make His power available to you. Besides, the Lord Jesus Himself commanded:

**“Receive ye the Holy Ghost”** (John 20:22b).

Will you obey?

If you haven't yet received the baptism in the Holy Spirit, you need to! Either go to someone who already has, or directly seek the Lord in prayer about it.

(If you call the Andrew Wommack Ministries Helpline [719-635-1111], one of our prayer ministers will be happy to answer your questions and pray with you to receive. We see many, many people baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues over the phone!)

As you speak in tongues, your spirit prays, and the perfect mind of Christ releases the hidden wisdom of God. Then, ask and believe for interpretation (1 Cor. 14:13). Let God give you understanding so that revelation knowledge of the mysteries you are speaking in the spirit can come out into your physical mind. That's when you'll see His power manifest!

# Empowerment Required

## *Lesson 17 – Outline*

1. God has imparted perfect wisdom and complete revelation into your born-again spirit.

**“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding”** (Prov. 4:7).

- A. Wisdom and understanding are keys that will unlock anything else in life you need.
  - B. Therefore, draw on that wisdom and receive understanding so the floodgates of your soul will open up to allow God’s truths already in your spirit to manifest in the physical realm.
2. Without the empowerment of the Holy Spirit, you won’t be able to fully release all of these wonderful realities already present in your born-again spirit.

- A. The Holy Spirit is the one who releases the wisdom and revelation of God.

**“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you”** (John 14:26).

- B. He comforts, teaches, reminds, guides into all truth, listens, speaks, shows things to come, glorifies Jesus, and receives of Him and shows it by revelation to you.

**“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you”** (John 16:12-14).

3. When you receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit, the ability to pray in tongues comes with it.

- A. As you pray in the Spirit, you draw on and release the wisdom that’s in the born-again part of you.
- B. It’s not the only way, but it’s certainly one of the primary ways.

4. The baptism in the Holy Spirit is a second, separate experience from salvation.

- A. You are endowed with power by the Holy Ghost and the gift of speaking in tongues, which will help you operate this power.
- B. Speaking in tongues produces tremendous spiritual benefits.

5. If you aren't baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues, you're really missing out.
  - A. In fact, you're probably frustrated and powerless in your Christian life.
  - B. Will you obey the Lord's command?

**“Receive ye the Holy Ghost”** (John 20:22b).

(If you call the Andrew Wommack Ministries Helpline [719-635-1111], one of our prayer ministers will be happy to answer your questions and pray with you to receive. We see many, many people baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues over the phone!)

# Empowerment Required

## *Lesson 17 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. God has imparted perfect wisdom and complete revelation into our born-again spirits (Prov. 4:7). Wisdom and understanding are keys that will unlock anything else in life we need. Therefore, we draw on that wisdom and receive understanding so the floodgates of our souls will open up to allow God’s truths already in our spirits to manifest in the physical realm.
2. Without the empowerment of the Holy Spirit, we won’t be able to fully release all of these wonderful realities already present in our born-again spirits. The Holy Spirit is the one who releases the wisdom and revelation of God (John 14:26). He comforts, teaches, reminds, guides into all truth, listens, speaks, shows things to come, glorifies Jesus, and receives of Him and shows it by revelation to us (John 16:12-14).
3. When we receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit, the ability to pray in tongues comes with it. As we pray in the Spirit, we draw on and release the wisdom that’s in the born-again part of us. It’s not the only way to do this, but it’s certainly one of the primary ways.

1. A. According to Proverbs 4:7, what is the principal thing? (Wisdom)  
B. What else does this verse recommend that we get? (Understanding)
2. A. Is it possible to fully release all of these wonderful realities already present in our born-again spirits without the empowerment of the Holy Spirit? (No)  
B. According to John 14:26 and 16:12-14, what does the Holy Spirit do? (Comforts, teaches, reminds, guides into all truth, listens, speaks, shows things to come, glorifies Jesus, and receives of Him and shows it by revelation to us)
3. A. When we receive the baptism in the Holy Spirit, does the ability to pray in tongues come with it? (Yes)  
B. As we pray in the Spirit, what are we doing? (We’re drawing on and releasing the wisdom that’s in the born-again part of us)

4. The baptism in the Holy Spirit is a second, separate experience from salvation. We are endowed with power by the Holy Ghost and the gift of speaking in tongues, which helps us operate this power. Speaking in tongues produces tremendous spiritual benefits.
5. If you aren't baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues, you're really missing out. In fact, you're probably frustrated and powerless in your Christian life. Will you obey the Lord's command? "Receive ye the Holy Ghost" (John 20:22).

(If you call the Andrew Wommack Ministries Helpline [719-635-1111], one of our prayer ministers will be happy to answer your questions and pray with you to receive. We see many, many people baptized in the Holy Spirit and speaking in tongues over the phone!)

4. A. Are we automatically baptized in the Holy Spirit the instant we're born again? (No, it's a second, separate experience from salvation)  
B. When we receive this baptism—this endowment of power—by the Holy Ghost, what does speaking in tongues do? (It helps us operate this power)
5. A. Believers who aren't baptized in the Holy Spirit are usually what? (Frustrated and powerless in their Christian lives)  
B. What does our Lord Jesus Christ command us to do in John 20:22? (Receive the Holy Spirit)  
C. Has anyone in the group received the baptism in the Holy Spirit? (Have them share their stories)

# Empowerment Required

## *Lesson 17 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What does Proverbs 4:7 call wisdom?
2. What two things should we be sure to get?
3. What baptism did Jesus receive in Luke 3:21?
4. What baptism did Jesus receive in Luke 3:22?
5. How did the Holy Spirit descend upon Him?
6. What did the voice from heaven say?
7. In Luke 4:1, how does the Bible describe Jesus immediately after being baptized in the Holy Spirit?
8. Where did the Spirit immediately lead Him?
9. According to Luke 4:14, how did Jesus return to Galilee after facing down the devil in the wilderness?
10. Had Jesus done any miracles before being baptized in the Holy Spirit?
11. What did Jesus call the Holy Spirit in John 14:26?
12. According to John 14:26, what does He do?
13. What did Jesus call the Holy Spirit in John 16:13?
14. According to John 16:13-14, what does He do?
15. What did Jesus do to His disciples in John 20:22?
16. After that, what did He say?

17. Was this a suggestion, a request, or a command?
  
18. According to 1 Corinthians 14:13, what are we able to ask for and receive when we pray in tongues?



# Empowerment Required

## *Lesson 17 – Answer Key*

1. “The principal thing.”
2. Wisdom and understanding.
3. Water baptism.
4. The baptism in the Holy Spirit.
5. In a bodily shape like a dove.
6. “You are My beloved Son; in You I am well pleased.”
7. He’s described as being full of the Holy Spirit.
8. Into the wilderness.
9. He returned in the power of the Spirit.
10. No.
11. The Comforter.
12. He teaches us all things and reminds us of everything Jesus has said.
13. The Spirit of truth.
14. He guides us into all truth, speaks to us what He hears the Father say, shows us things to come, glorifies Jesus and receives from Him and shows it by revelation to us.
15. He breathed on them.
16. “Receive the Holy Spirit.”
17. A command.
18. Interpretation.

# **Empowerment Required**

## *Lesson 17 – Scriptures*

**“Wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom: and with all thy getting get understanding” (Prov. 4:7).**

**“Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased” (Luke 3:21-22).**

**“And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness. . . . And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about” (Luke 4:1 and 14).**

**“But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (John 14:26).**

**“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you” (John 16:12-14).**

**“And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost” (John 20:22).**

**“Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret” (1 Cor. 14:13).**

# Spirit vs. Flesh

## Lesson 18

.....

Once you're born again, the rest of the Christian life is learning to walk in the Spirit. It's letting what God has done through the new birth dominate you more than your physical, emotional realm. That's really how simple the Christian life is!

It may be simple, but it's not easy! One of the hardest things you'll ever do is learn how to turn from your natural self-rule and let who you are in Christ dominate instead. Why is it so difficult? You must perceive your spirit by faith in God's Word, because you can't see or feel it. Jesus' words are spirit and life (John 6:63). When you look into God's Word, you're looking into a spiritual mirror (James 1:23-25). The only way to really know what is true about who you are in the spirit is by believing God's Word. You must shift from walking by sight (sense knowledge) to walking by faith (revelation knowledge) (2 Cor. 5:7). All you have to do is start basing your thoughts, actions, and identity on who you are in Christ.

As long as your flesh is contrary to your spirit, you'll have conflict.

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law”** (Gal. 5:16-18).

“Contrary” means they're opposite, enemies, and adversaries. This conflict between spirit and flesh is your true spiritual warfare!

Each and every day of your life, the battle lies in whether you'll be dominated by your flesh or your spirit. Your flesh gravitates toward what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. Therefore, it leans toward the influence of Satan and his kingdom, which operates in the physical realm. The devil is flesh-oriented, working through carnal, natural things. He tempts you to not believe God by things you can see and feel. On the other hand, the Lord operates in the spirit realm, primarily through His Word. Due to the nature of this intense, continual inner conflict, you can't just do what you want to do. Either your spirit will dominate you or your flesh will instead!

You cannot please God in your flesh.

**“So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God”** (Rom. 8:8).

It's not just hard—it's impossible. This means you must identify the flesh and deal with it!

### *Not “Sinful Nature”*

Living after the flesh brings all forms of death.

**“Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live” (Rom. 8:12-13).**

This not only means ultimate physical death (when your spirit and soul separate from your body) but also includes everything that leads up to it.

**“For the wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:23a).**

Biblically speaking, any result of sin is a form of death. Depression, discouragement, anger, bitterness, fear, worry, sickness, poverty, loneliness, etc. are all death. If you live after the flesh, you’ll die—or be sick, impoverished, depressed, angry, etc. Your flesh is Satan’s inroad to bring death into your life.

As a born-again believer, your flesh is made up of your soulish and physical realms. However, before you were saved, it also included your fallen human spirit.

My study of the *New International Version* of the Bible has shown me that it almost always substitutes the phrase “sinful nature” for what the *King James Version* translates as “flesh.” This interpretation may work to a certain degree, but I’ve found it misleading in many places. For instance, in Romans, the flesh basically refers to either someone who isn’t born again or a born-again believer who isn’t living under the control of the Holy Spirit. The phrase “sinful nature” does not accurately convey this truth.

### *Newness of Life*

As Paul taught how God now deals with people based on His grace, not their performance, this raised the question in Romans 6:1:

**“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?”**

The answer, of course, is no.

**“God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?”**  
(Rom. 6:2).

Your spirit is the part of you that’s dead to sin. Your body and soul can still do sinful things, but the born-again part of you cannot.

**“Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?” (Rom. 6:3).**

This is talking about being baptized into the body of Christ (with the Holy Spirit being the baptizer), not water baptism (1 Cor. 12:13). There are different baptizers and different elements you’re baptized into. After professing faith in Christ, you should follow the Lord and be physically dunked underwater as a symbol of what took place at salvation. Also, Jesus will baptize you in the

Holy Spirit. But Romans 6:3 is referring to how, when you're born again, you are placed in Christ and He in you. You receive the Spirit of Christ and He receives you. When this baptism took place, you were baptized into His death.

Notice how being baptized into His death is automatic, but walking in newness of life isn't:

**“Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also *should* walk in newness of life”** (Rom. 6:4, emphasis mine).

Manifesting newness of life is something that should happen, but it depends on how you renew your mind.

**“For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: **Knowing this**”** (Rom. 6:5-6a).

Your spirit died to sin, cannot sin, and has no desire for sin, but this doesn't automatically mean that your soul and body will reflect that change. Your walking in resurrection life depends upon you:

**“Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin”** (Rom. 6:6).

“Old man” refers to the spirit you had prior to salvation. It's your spirit realm that was dead in trespasses and sins (Eph. 2:1). Your “old man” no longer exists because it's been crucified, has died, and was buried with Christ. The way some people teach the Scriptures would lead you to believe you have up to four spirits all living somewhere inside you at once (old spirit, new spirit, Spirit of Christ, and Holy Spirit). That's worse than being schizophrenic—it's multiple personalities! God's Word doesn't teach that!

Most Christians today believe they have an old nature and a new nature. That's wrong, because your old self died and your new self is now who you are in the spirit. What you're really dealing with is the spirit vs. the flesh. However, I'm not going to verify this any further here, because my focus is showing you how to overcome the flesh. That's where we'll pick up on our next lesson.

# Spirit vs. Flesh

## Lesson 18 – Outline

1. Once you're born again, the rest of the Christian life is learning to walk in the Spirit, which is letting what God has done through the new birth dominate you more than your physical, emotional realm.
2. One of the hardest things you'll ever do is learn how to turn from your natural self-rule and let who you are in Christ dominate instead.
  - A. It's difficult because you must perceive your spirit by faith in God's Word because you can't see or feel it.
  - B. All you have to do is start basing your thoughts, actions, and identity on who you are in Christ.
3. As long as your flesh is contrary to your spirit, you'll have conflict.

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law” (Gal. 5:16-18).**

- A. “Contrary” means they're opposite, enemies, and adversaries.
  - B. This conflict between your spirit and flesh is your true spiritual warfare.
4. You cannot please God in your flesh.

**“So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Rom. 8:8).**

- A. Living after the flesh brings all forms of death.

**“Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live” (Rom. 8:12-13).**

**“For the wages of sin is death” (Rom. 6:23a).**

- B. Your flesh is Satan's inroad to bring death into your life.
  - C. As a born-again believer, your flesh is made up of your soulish and physical realms.
5. As Paul taught how God now deals with people based on His grace, not their performance, this raised the question in Romans 6:1:

**“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound?”**

A. The answer, of course, is no.

**“God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein?”**  
(Rom. 6:2).

B. Your spirit is the part of you that’s dead to sin.

C. Your body and soul can still do sinful things, but the born-again part of you cannot.

6. When you were born again, you were baptized into His death.

**“Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death?”** (Rom. 6:3).

A. Being baptized into His death is automatic, but walking in newness of life isn’t.

**“Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also *should walk in newness of life*”** (Rom. 6:4, emphasis mine).

B. Manifesting newness of life is something that should happen, but it depends on how you renew your mind.

**“For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this”** (Rom. 6:5-6a).

7. Your spirit died to sin, cannot sin, and has no desire for sin, but this doesn’t automatically mean that your soul and body will reflect that change.

A. Your walking in resurrection life depends upon you:

**“Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin”** (Rom. 6:6).

B. “Old man” refers to the spirit you had prior to salvation.

C. Your “old man” no longer exists because it’s been crucified, has died, and was buried with Christ.

D. Your new self is now who you are in the spirit.

E. What you’re dealing with is the spirit vs. the flesh.

# Spirit vs. Flesh

## *Lesson 18 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Once we’re born again, the rest of the Christian life is learning to walk in the Spirit, which is letting what God has done through the new birth dominate us more than our physical, emotional realm.
2. One of the hardest things we’ll ever do is learn how to turn from our natural self-rule and let who we are in Christ dominate instead. It’s difficult because we must perceive our spirits by faith in God’s Word because we can’t see or feel them. All we have to do is start basing our thoughts, actions, and identity on who we are in Christ.
3. As long as our flesh is contrary to our spirits, we’ll have conflict (Gal. 5:16-18). “Contrary” means they’re opposite, enemies, and adversaries. This conflict between our spirits and our flesh is our true spiritual warfare.
4. We cannot please God in our flesh (Rom. 8:8). Living after the flesh brings all forms of death (Rom. 8:12-13 and 6:23). Our flesh is Satan’s inroad to bring death into our lives. As born-again believers, our flesh is made up of our soulish and physical realms.

1. Once we’re born again, what is the rest of the Christian life? (Learning to walk in the Spirit)
2. Why is this so difficult? (We must perceive our spirits by faith in God’s Word because we can’t see or feel them)
3. A. Read Galatians 5:16-18. As long as our flesh is contrary to our spirits, what will we have? (Conflict)  
B. What is our true spiritual warfare? (This conflict between our spirits and our flesh)
4. A. According to Romans 8:8, can we please God in our flesh? (No)  
B. What does Romans 8:12-13 and 6:23 reveal that living after the flesh brings? (Death)



5. As Paul taught how God now deals with people based on His grace, not their performance, this raised the question in Romans 6:1. The answer, of course, is “God forbid! How can we, who are dead to sin, live any longer in it?” (Rom. 6:2). The spirit is the part of us that is dead to sin. Our bodies and souls can still do sinful things, but the born-again part of us cannot.
6. When we were born again, we were baptized into His death (Rom. 6:3). Being baptized into His death is automatic, but walking in newness of life isn’t (Rom. 6:4). Manifesting newness of life is something that should happen, but it depends on how we renew our minds (Rom. 6:5-6).
7. Our spirits died to sin, cannot sin, and have no desire for sin, but this doesn’t automatically mean that our souls and bodies will reflect that change. Our walking in resurrection life depends upon us knowing that our “old man” is crucified with Him (Rom. 6:6). “Old man” refers to the spirit we had prior to salvation. Our old self no longer exists, because it’s been crucified, has died, and was buried with Christ. Our new self is now who we are in the spirit. What we’re dealing with is the spirit vs. the flesh.

5. A. According to Romans 6:1-2, can we just keep on sinning since we are saved by grace? (No)  
B. Why not? (How can we, who are dead to sin, live any longer in it?)
6. A. According to Romans 6:3-6, what happened when we were born again? (We were baptized into Christ’s death)  
B. What does manifesting this newness of life depend on? (How we renew our minds)
7. A. What does the term “old man” refer to in Romans 6:6? (The spirit we had prior to salvation)  
B. Does our old self still exist? (No, it’s been crucified, has died, and was buried with Christ)

# **Spirit vs. Flesh**

*Lesson 18 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to John 6:63, what are Jesus' words?
2. What does James 1:23-25 reveal God's Word to be?
3. Second Corinthians 5:7 says that we walk by \_\_\_\_\_, not by \_\_\_\_\_.
4. According to Galatians 5:16-18, if we walk in the Spirit, we will not:
  - A. Fulfill the lust of the Spirit.
  - B. Fulfill the law of the flesh.
  - C. Fulfill the lust of the flesh.
  - D. Fulfill the law of the Spirit.
5. What effect does it have upon you when your flesh lusts against the Spirit and the Spirit lusts against your flesh?
6. How do we avoid being under the Law?
7. According to Romans 8:8, who cannot please God?
8. Read Romans 8:12-13. What are the results of living after the flesh?
9. How, then, do we live?
10. According to Romans 6:23, what are the results of sin?
11. Read Romans 6:1-2. What question is normally raised once we begin to understand that God now deals with us based on His grace and not our performance?
12. How does Paul answer that question?
  - A. "For heaven's sake!"
  - B. "God bless you!"
  - C. "God forbid."
  - D. "Lord willing!"

13. Which part of our born-again beings is dead to sin?
  - A. Spirit.
  - B. Soul.
  - C. Body.
  - D. None of the above.
  
14. According to Romans 6:3 and 1 Corinthians 12:13, what happened the instant we were born again?
  
15. What else does Romans 6:3 say occurred at this point in time?
  
16. Read Romans 6:4. Since Jesus died and was raised up by the glory of the Father, we also died and should what?
  
17. According to Romans 6:5-6, what must we know in order to be able to manifest this resurrection life?
  
18. What does Ephesians 2:1 reveal about our old selves?

# **Spirit vs. Flesh**

*Lesson 18 – Answer Key*

1. Spirit and life.
2. A spiritual mirror.
3. Faith, sight.
4. C. Fulfill the lust of the flesh.
5. You cannot do the things that you would.
6. Be led of the Spirit.
7. They that are in the flesh.
8. Death.
9. Through the Spirit, we mortify the deeds of the body.
10. Death.
11. Shall we continue in sin so that grace may abound?
12. C. “God forbid.”
13. A. Spirit.
14. We were baptized into Jesus Christ.
15. We were baptized into His death.
16. Walk in newness of life.
17. That our old selves are crucified with Christ.
18. Our old selves were dead in trespasses and sins.

# **Spirit vs. Flesh**

## *Lesson 18 – Scriptures*

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

**“For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed” (James 1:23-25).**

**“For we walk by faith, not by sight” (2 Cor. 5:7).**

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would. But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law” (Gal. 5:16-18).**

**“So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Rom. 8:8).**

**“Therefore, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die: but if ye through the Spirit do mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live” (Rom. 8:12-13).**

**“For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 6:23).**

**“What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin” (Rom. 6:1-6).**

**“For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit” (1 Cor. 12:13).**

**“And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins” (Eph. 2:1).**



# Walk in the Spirit

## Lesson 19

.....

The *New International Version* renders the *King James Version* “flesh” as your old “sinful nature.” That’s just too much interpretation! At the new birth, your old nature is crucified, dead, and gone. In its place, God gives you a brand-new spirit, and you become a new creature. That spirit is so united with Christ that there is actually no difference between your born-again spirit and the Spirit of Christ, which was sent into your heart. You literally became one with Him (1 Cor. 6:17). Your born-again spirit is identical to Jesus. The two of you have become one, making a brand-new person. Then, your spirit was sealed, surrounded, and encased by the Holy Spirit!

People embrace this concept of having an old nature that drives them to sin, because it logically explains their continued propensity for it. But Romans 6:6 explains what you need to know to be free. Your old self was crucified with Him. But then the body of sin has to be destroyed!

When you die physically, you leave a body behind.

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also”**  
(James 2:26).

Physical death occurs when your spirit leaves your body. It takes a period of time for your body to begin deteriorating and decaying. Even though your spirit is gone, your physical body can look exactly the same as it did during life for a brief period of time.

Many years ago, my friend worked in the morgue on the thirteenth floor of Parkland Hospital in Dallas, Texas. One time he pulled out a dead man on a slab for an autopsy. When my friend turned around to do something, this guy sat up with his mouth open wide and arms dangling at his sides. Completely spooked, my friend almost jumped right out the window!

Running down the hall, he dragged somebody in to check this man’s vital signs. Dead! After pushing the corpse back down, the medical professional explained, “Sometimes when a person has just died, there will still be electrical impulses in their body. Their muscles contract, and they can sit up like that, but he’s not alive.” The body still had some of life’s mannerisms, but life itself had departed.

### *One Nature, Two Minds*

When you were born again, your old sin nature left behind a body. That’s why you still feel a drawing toward sin, even though you’re dead to it. Your old self was crucified, has died, and now is gone, but its effects are still being felt through your physical body and unrenewed mind.

Your natural mind was programmed to act like the child of the devil that you were before receiving the Lord (Eph. 2:1-2). You were taught how to be selfish, angry, lustful, critical, greedy, and bitter and to do all the other sins that you did. But now that you’re born again, your heavenly

Father has adopted you into His family and given you a brand-new, righteous nature. However, your old self left behind a body. This means that your physical mind will continue functioning like a computer under its prior programming until you renew it to God's Word!

You have one nature, but two minds. If you think you have both the old nature and the new one inside, you're going to think you are two different people at once. That's schizophrenic! You only have one nature—the new one. But you do have two different minds—the unrenewed mind (flesh) and the mind of Christ (spirit).

The key is to reprogram your physical mind to agree with your spiritual mind. Your spirit is always for God, always thinks on who you are in Christ, always considers what you have in the Lord, and always believes what you can do in Him. As you renew your natural mind to think like your spirit, you'll experience the life and power of God within you.

### *Simple, but Not Easy*

It's that simple, but not that easy. If you tapped into the spirit realm as a brand-new believer, only listened to who you are in Christ, and let the Holy Spirit instruct you without any negative outside influence (human, religious, or demonic), you would naturally start radiating and manifesting the life of God in your thoughts and actions. However, life's just not that way. You've been programmed wrong and need reprogramming. The Enemy lies to you, and friends, family, and religious people say, "Oh, no, you don't have the nature of God! You're just an old sinner saved by grace. You can't do these things!" These voices constantly challenge you not to believe what your spirit is saying. Due to this, you manifest the life of God in your spirit only to varying degrees, depending on how well you renew your mind.

Your physical mind decides whether you'll be dominated by your spirit or your flesh. If you don't renew it with God's Word, your natural mind will automatically gravitate toward what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. You must get into God's Word and mix it with faith in order to be led by your spirit.

**“Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh” (Gal. 5:16).**

Buttoning my shirt was a problem for me until I reprogrammed my mind. I'm not sure why, but when I was a kid, I had a hard time buttoning my shirt. Every time I started, I'd get it wrong. When I got down to the bottom, I'd realize that I buttoned it incorrectly and had to redo it. Yet today, I have no problem buttoning my shirt. I wear buttoned shirts often and button them correctly the first time without even thinking about it. Buttoning my shirt has become “second nature.”

You can mistake something that comes so naturally to you today as your “nature,” when in reality, it's something you learned. The reason you still do some of the things you do is because you haven't renewed your mind. Your old sin nature isn't in there, forcing you to do things you did before you were born again. You've just acted on these negative things and had them reinforced by the carnal world around you so often that they've become established patterns of thinking and acting. If you're born again, you're not evil inside! You just need to reprogram your mind to God's ways of thinking and acting!



Jesus has set you free! There's no sinful nature inside of you that you're warring against. That old self is dead and gone. The only reason you aren't manifesting your freedom in every area of life is because you're ignorant of it. You haven't renewed your mind, and your flesh still dominates you in different ways. Personally, I've experienced a tremendous amount of victory, but I'm still in the process of renewing my mind just like anybody else!

### *Spirit = spirit*

The "flesh" is not really describing a sinful nature after you've been born again. Rather, it more accurately refers to every thought, emotion, desire, and part of you that isn't under the control of your brand-new, righteous spirit.

Technically speaking, what's true of the Holy Spirit is also true of your born-again spirit because they are one.

**"But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit"** (1 Cor. 6:17).

There aren't capital letters in the Greek. Translators decided from the context of a passage whether to render it "Spirit" or "spirit." Either way—Holy Spirit or born-again spirit—the same point is made.

**"Walk in the Spirit [spirit], and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh"** (Gal. 5:16, brackets mine).

The thoughts, desires, patterns, and habits that were established in you through the old sinful nature will begin to diminish as you choose to be dominated by your spirit instead. You don't have to continue in bondage to lust, alcohol, hatred, drugs, strife, gossip, depression, sickness, discouragement, disease, poverty, etc. You can break all of those things off because, in your spirit, you're already free. It's just a matter of renewing your mind and beginning to manifest who you are in Christ. As that happens, you won't fulfill the lust of the flesh. Awesome!

# Walk in the Spirit

## Lesson 19 – Outline

1. Your old self was crucified with Him, but then the body of sin has to be destroyed.

**“Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin” (Rom. 6:6).**

2. When you die physically, you leave a body behind.

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (James 2:26).**

- A. Physical death occurs when your spirit leaves your body.
  - B. Even though your spirit is gone, your physical body can look exactly the same as it did during life for a brief period of time.
3. When you were born again, your old sin nature left behind a body.
    - A. Your old self was crucified, has died, and now is gone, but its effects are still being felt through your physical body and unrenewed mind.
    - B. Your natural mind was programmed to act like the child of the devil that you were before receiving the Lord (Eph. 2:1-2).
    - C. This means your physical mind will continue functioning like a computer under its prior programming until you renew it to God’s Word.
  4. You have one nature, but two minds.
    - A. You only have one nature—the new one.
    - B. But you do have two different minds—the unrenewed mind (flesh) and the mind of Christ (spirit).
    - C. As you reprogram/renew your natural mind to think like your spirit, you’ll experience the life and power of God within you.
  5. Your physical mind decides whether you’ll be dominated by your spirit or your flesh.
    - A. If you don’t renew it with God’s Word, your natural mind will automatically gravitate toward what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.
    - B. You must get into God’s Word and mix it with faith in order to be led by your spirit.

**“Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh”** (Gal. 5:16).

- C. You can mistake something that comes so naturally to you today as your “nature,” when in reality, it’s something you learned.
  - D. The reason you still do some of the things you do is because you haven’t renewed your mind.
6. After you’ve been born again, the “flesh” isn’t really describing a sinful nature, but more accurately refers to every thought, emotion, desire, and part of you that isn’t under the control of your brand-new, righteous spirit.
- A. Technically speaking, what’s true of the Holy Spirit is also true of your born-again spirit because they are one.

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit”** (1 Cor. 6:17).

- B. Since there aren’t capital letters in the Greek, translators decided from the context of a passage whether to render it “Spirit” or “spirit.”
- C. Either way—Holy Spirit or born-again spirit—the same point is made.

**“Walk in the Spirit [spirit], and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh”** (Gal. 5:16, brackets mine).

7. The thoughts, desires, patterns, and habits that were established in you through the old sinful nature will begin to diminish as you choose to be dominated by your spirit instead.
- A. You can break all of those things off because, in your spirit, you’re already free.
  - B. It’s just a matter of renewing your mind and beginning to manifest who you are in Christ.

# Walk in the Spirit

## *Lesson 19 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Our old selves were crucified with Him, but then the body of sin has to be destroyed (Rom. 6:6).
2. When we die physically, we leave a body behind (James 2:26). Physical death occurs when our spirits leave our bodies. Even though our spirits are gone, our physical bodies can look exactly the same as they did during life for a brief period of time.
3. When we were born again, our old sin nature left behind a body. The old self was crucified, has died, and now is gone, but its effects are still being felt through our physical bodies and unrenewed minds. Our natural minds were programmed to act like the child of the devil that we were before receiving the Lord (Eph. 2:1-2). This means our physical minds will continue functioning like a computer under the prior programming until we renew them to God’s Word.
4. We have one nature, but two minds. We only have one nature—the new one. But we do have two different minds—the unrenewed mind (flesh) and the mind of Christ (spirit). As we reprogram/renew our natural minds to think like our spirits, we’ll experience the life and power of God within us.

1. A. Read Romans 6:6. What was crucified with Christ? (Our old selves)  
B. What needs to be destroyed? (The body of sin)
2. A. According to James 2:26, when does physical death occur? (When our spirits leave our bodies)  
B. Can our physical bodies look exactly the same as they did during life for a brief period of time? (Yes)
3. A. According to Ephesians 2:1-2, what were our natural minds programmed to act like before we received the Lord? (The child of the devil that we were)  
B. How long will our natural minds continue functioning like a computer under the prior programming? (Until we renew them to God’s Word)
4. A. What are our two different minds? (The unrenewed mind [flesh] and the mind of Christ [spirit])  
B. What happens as we reprogram/renew our natural minds to think like our spirits? (We begin to experience the life and power of God within us)

5. Our physical minds decide whether we'll be dominated by our spirits or our flesh. If we don't renew them with God's Word, our natural minds will automatically gravitate toward what they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. We must get into God's Word and mix it with faith in order to be led by our spirits (Gal. 5:16). We can mistake something that comes so naturally to us today as our "nature," when in reality, it's something we learned. The reason we still do some of the things we do is because we haven't renewed our minds.
6. After we've been born again, the "flesh" isn't really describing a sinful nature, but more accurately refers to every thought, emotion, desire, and part of us that isn't under the control of our brand-new, righteous spirits. Technically speaking, what's true of the Holy Spirit is also true of our born-again spirits because they are one (1 Cor. 6:17). Since there aren't capital letters in the Greek, translators decided from the context of a passage whether to render it "Spirit" or "spirit." Either way—Holy Spirit or born-again spirit—the same point is made (Gal. 5:16).
7. The thoughts, desires, patterns, and habits that were established in us through the old sinful nature will begin to diminish as we choose to be dominated by our spirits instead. We can break all of those things off because, in our spirits, we're already free. It's just a matter of renewing our minds and beginning to manifest who we are in Christ.

5. A. If we don't renew them to God's Word, what do our natural minds automatically gravitate toward? (What they can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel)  
B. According to Galatians 5:16, how should a believer walk? (In the Spirit)
6. A. After we've been born again, the "flesh" refers to what? (Every thought, emotion, desire, and part of us that isn't under the control of our brand-new, righteous spirits)  
B. According to 1 Corinthians 6:17, we who are joined to the Lord are what? (One spirit)
7. As we choose to be dominated by our spirits instead of our flesh, what will happen? (The thoughts, desires, patterns, and habits that were established in us through the old sinful nature will begin to diminish)

# **Walk in the Spirit**

*Lesson 19 – Discipleship Questions*

1. According to James 2:26, what is the body without the spirit?
2. What is faith without works?
3. Read Ephesians 2:1-2. What were we before we were born again?
4. In times past, how did we walk?
5. Who is the prince of the power of the air?
6. What is he and what does he do?
7. What are we commanded to do in Galatians 5:16?
8. If we do that, what will we simultaneously not do?
9. Does this verse address believers or unbelievers?
10. According to 1 Corinthians 6:17, born-again believers are:
  - A. One spirit with the Lord.
  - B. Loved of the Lord.
  - C. Joined unto the Lord.
  - D. Both A and C.
  - E. All of the above.

# Walk in the Spirit

## *Lesson 19 – Answer Key*

1. Dead.
2. Dead.
3. Dead in trespasses and sins.
4. According to the course of this world and the prince of the power of the air.
5. Satan.
6. He's the spirit that now works in the children of disobedience.
7. Walk in the Spirit.
8. Fulfill the lust of the flesh.
9. Believers. (People who aren't born again cannot walk in the Spirit. They can only walk in the flesh.)
10. D. Both A and C.

# Walk in the Spirit

## *Lesson 19 – Scriptures*

**“But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit”** (1 Cor. 6:17).

**“Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin”** (Rom. 6:6).

**“For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also”** (James 2:26).

**“And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience”** (Eph. 2:1-2).

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh”** (Gal. 5:16).



# The Impossible Life

## Lesson 20

.....

**“For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me (*that is, in my flesh,*) dwelleth no good thing”**  
(Rom. 7:15-18a, emphasis mine).

Paul knew that the Spirit of Christ indwelt his born-again spirit. Therefore, he couldn't be technically correct and say that “in me . . . dwelleth no good thing” without the clarifying phrase “that is, in my flesh.”

Paul acknowledged his born-again spirit, but declared, “There is no good thing in my flesh—my unrenewed mind and physical body, all the external parts of me functioning independent from Christ. There's nothing good about that! I'm going to have to lay this flesh down and receive a new body and a new soul that are completely renewed and think exactly like God.”

**“For I know that in me (*that is, in my flesh,*) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”** (Rom. 7:18-23).

Sounds a lot like what he wrote in Galatians:

**“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would”** (Gal. 5:17).

Romans 7:24 summarizes Paul's dismal dilemma:

**“O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?”**

### *Without Supernatural Assistance*

Romans 7 doesn't teach that Paul was constantly trying and failing to do the right thing. He wasn't describing his present Christian life and saying that this is the way that it is. Paul wasn't confessing that after all those years, he was still struggling with lust, sexual sin, anger, and bitterness. Neither was he saying, “You have this flesh, and try as you might, you can never beat it.”

Paul was simply describing the inability of the flesh—your physical ability, natural mind, emotions, and all actions independent from Christ—to please God. You cannot overcome your flesh on your own; you have to start living from who you are in Christ. Your spirit being is completely changed and infused with the life of God. You can only please Him through living by your spirit!

The Christian life isn't just difficult to live—it's impossible! In your flesh, you can't do what the Lord has told you to do. He's commanded you to just bear it when someone insults you. If they slap you on the face, you're to turn the other cheek. If they sue you and take away your coat, you're to give them your cloak as well. If someone forces you to carry their burden one mile against your will, go two miles (Matt. 5:39-41). Your natural self, independent of God, just won't do things like that!

It's natural to be self-serving, self-seeking, and self-promoting! If somebody slaps you on the cheek, you want to hit both of theirs. If someone takes something from you through a lawsuit, you want to hire the best lawyer to sue them back. But the Lord's told you, "Do the opposite." Without supernatural assistance, it's impossible to do what Jesus commands! That's why Paul declared, "It's no longer me that lives but Christ who lives through me" (Gal. 2:20).

#### 490

There's a tremendous amount of liberty that comes with recognizing and releasing Christ in you. You don't have to say in the flesh "Well, I will love you" and turn the other cheek through gritted teeth. It's much better to pray, "Father, in myself, I'd like to knock their block off. My flesh cannot do this [Paul described this in Romans 7], but in my spirit, I can do all things through Christ who strengthens me. I have the same spirit that Jesus had when He hung on the cross and forgave the very people who crucified Him. [You've read that in God's Word and believed it.] Father, I don't feel like it right now, but I know my spirit is the same one that enabled Jesus to extend mercy to those who mocked Him. In the natural, I can't do this. Father, please live through me now. Give me a supernatural compassion for this person so I can love them!"

Peter thought he was being very generous when he asked, "How many times should I forgive my brother—up to seven times a day?" Jesus answered, "Not seven times but seventy times seven!" That's 490 times in one day! This was His way of communicating that there shouldn't be a limit on your forgiveness (Matt. 18:21-22).

The Lord wants you to forgive totally—as much and as many times as it takes! In your flesh, you might be able to forgive a person for some minor things once, twice, or even seven times in a day (Peter thought he might be able to do that). But what Jesus asked goes far beyond your human ability. The only way you can forgive like that is by saying, "Father, I can't do it, but You can. Lord, please love them through me." When you humble yourself, turning away from your own natural ability and to God and His divine ability, you'll discover a supernatural strength flowing through you!

You have an unlimited supply of God's kind of love in your spirit.

**"Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her**

**own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things” (1 Cor. 13:4-7).**

His love never fails (1 Cor. 13:8)!

In your spirit, you have an unlimited ability to forgive, endure, believe, and hope! If you catch yourself remarking “I can’t put up with this person anymore. I just can’t take it. I’m at the end of my rope!” what you’re really saying is, “I’ve come to the end of my flesh!” That’s good! Now let your spirit take over!

### ***You Can Too!***

Pray, “God, I’m sorry! I’ve been trying this in myself, which is why I’m burned out, frustrated, and angry. Forgive me and live Your life through me. I believe Your Word. In the spirit, I am a brand-new person. If I would walk in the Spirit, I won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh. [Then start meditating on who you are and what you have in Christ.] By faith, this is who I choose to believe I am.”

That’s renewing your mind and releasing the supernatural life of God out of your spirit into your soul and body. When your physical mind comes into agreement with your spiritual mind, you can literally begin to hope, endure, and believe in things that you couldn’t have done by your natural self!

I’ve been able to love the many different people who have come out against me. A guy I was witnessing to spat in my face. People have tried to physically assault me. Some other well-known ministers publicly called me a cult leader and said I was of the devil. A guy stole \$20,000 from our ministry. I’ve even been kidnapped and had threats on my life! But in all of this (and more), I can truthfully tell you that I have nothing against any of these people. I harbor no evil thoughts and never spend any time even thinking about them. I’ve completely forgiven each and every one. How? I renewed my mind to God’s Word and released the love and forgiveness that’s in my spirit. You can do it too!

# The Impossible Life

## Lesson 20 – Outline

1. Paul acknowledged his born-again spirit, but declared, “There is no good thing in my flesh—my unrenewed mind and physical body, all the external parts of me functioning independent from Christ.”

**“For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me (*that is, in my flesh,*) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members”** (Rom. 7:15-23, emphasis mine).

- A. Sounds a lot like what he wrote in Galatians:

**“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would”** (Gal. 5:17).

- B. Then Paul summarized his dismal dilemma in Romans 7:24:

**“O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?”**

2. Paul was simply describing the inability of the flesh—your physical ability, natural mind, emotions, and all actions independent from Christ—to please God.
  - A. In your flesh, you can’t do what the Lord has told you to do.
  - B. It’s natural to be self-serving, self-seeking, and self-promoting.
  - C. Without supernatural assistance, it’s impossible to do what Jesus commands.
3. There’s a tremendous amount of liberty that comes with recognizing and releasing Christ in you.
  - A. The Lord wants you to forgive totally—as much and as many times as it takes.
  - B. When you humble yourself, turning away from your own natural ability and to God and His divine ability, you’ll discover a supernatural strength flowing through you.

4. You have an unlimited supply of God's kind of love in your spirit.

**“Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things” (1 Cor. 13:4-7).**

A. His love never fails (1 Cor. 13:8).

B. In your spirit, you have an unlimited ability to forgive, endure, believe, and hope.

C. Now, let your spirit take over.

# The Impossible Life

## *Lesson 20 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Paul acknowledged his born-again spirit, but declared, “There is no good thing in my flesh—my unrenewed mind and physical body, all the external parts of me functioning independent from Christ” (Rom. 7:15-24). Sounds a lot like what he wrote in Galatians 5:17.
2. Paul was simply describing the inability of the flesh—our physical ability, natural minds, emotions, and all actions independent from Christ—to please God. In our flesh, we can’t do what the Lord has told us to do. It’s natural to be self-serving, self-seeking, and self-promoting. Without supernatural assistance, it’s impossible to do what Jesus commands.
3. There’s a tremendous amount of liberty that comes with recognizing and releasing Christ in us. The Lord wants us to forgive totally—as much and as many times as it takes. When we humble ourselves, turning away from our own natural abilities and to God and His divine ability, we’ll discover a supernatural strength flowing through us.
4. We have an unlimited supply of God’s kind of love in our spirits (1 Cor. 13:4-7). His love never fails (1 Cor. 13:8). In our spirits, we have an unlimited ability to forgive, endure, believe, and hope. Let’s let our spirits take over.

1. A. What part of himself was Paul lamenting in Romans 7:15-24? (His flesh)  
B. What does Galatians 5:17 reveal about the flesh and the Spirit? (They are contrary the one to the other, lusting against each other, so that we can’t do the things that we would)
2. A. What was Paul describing? (The inability of the flesh—physical ability, natural mind, emotions, and all actions independent from Christ—to please God)  
B. It’s natural to be \_\_\_\_\_. (Self-serving, self-seeking, and self-promoting)
3. A. What comes with recognizing and releasing Christ in us? (A tremendous amount of liberty)  
B. How much does the Lord want us to forgive? (Totally—as much and as many times as it takes)
4. A. According to 1 Corinthians 13:4-8, what do we have in our born-again spirits? (An unlimited supply of God’s kind of love)  
B. In light of this truth, what should we do? (Let our spirits take over)

# **The Impossible Life**

## *Lesson 20 – Additional Information*

A powerful study tool concerning Romans 7 is my *Life for Today Study Bible and Commentary: Romans Edition*. If you don't have a copy, you can order it in book form, or you can access the study notes free online: **[www.awmi.net](http://www.awmi.net)**.

# **The Impossible Life**

*Lesson 20 – Discipleship Questions*

1. Read Romans 7:15-18. What's the main idea?
2. Where did Paul say dwells in him no good thing?
3. Read Romans 7:18-23. What did Paul delight in after the inward man (spirit)?
4. What did he see working in his members, warring against his mind?
5. According to Galatians 5:17, what does the flesh lust against?
6. What does the Spirit lust against?
7. Since the Spirit and the flesh are contrary to one another, this means \_\_\_\_\_.
8. How did Paul describe himself in Romans 7:24?
9. What did he need deliverance from?
10. Read Matthew 5:39-41. What did Jesus command us to do when someone strikes us on the right cheek?
  - A. Immediately apply oil to the wound.
  - B. Turn and run.
  - C. Respond with a left jab.
  - D. Turn to them the other cheek also.
11. If someone brings a lawsuit against us and takes away our coat, what should we do?
  - A. Go to their house at night and steal it back.
  - B. Give them our cloak as well.
  - C. Hire a hit man.
  - D. Sue someone else for their coat.
12. What should we do if someone compels us to go a mile?
  - A. Go with them two.
  - B. Go half a mile and sneak off.
  - C. Flag a taxi.
  - D. Tell them, "No way!"



13. According to Galatians 2:20, who is crucified with Christ?
14. Who lives, then?
15. What do we live by now?
16. Who loved us and gave Himself for us?
17. What question did Peter ask Jesus in Matthew 18:21-22?
18. How did Jesus answer?
19. Read 1 Corinthians 13:4-8. Since God is love (1 John 4:8), read this passage again, substituting the word “God” for “love.”
20. Since God lives in and through you, read the following personal confession aloud.

***I suffer long and am kind. I don't envy others or boast of myself. I am not puffed up, nor do I behave unseemly, nor do I seek my own. I am not easily provoked, and I think no evil. I don't rejoice in iniquity, but I do rejoice in the truth. I bear all things, believe all things, hope all things, and endure all things. God's love in and through me never fails!***

# The Impossible Life

## *Lesson 20 – Answer Key*

1. I don't do what I want to do, but instead, I do what I hate.
2. In his flesh.
3. The law of God.
4. The law of sin.
5. The Spirit.
6. The flesh.
7. We can't do the things that we would.
8. A wretched man.
9. The body of this death.
10. D. Turn to them the other cheek also.
11. B. Give them our cloak as well.
12. A. Go with them two.
13. I am.
14. I do, but it's Christ living in and through me.
15. The faith of the Son of God.
16. Jesus Christ, the Son of God.
17. "Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him—up to seven times?"
18. "Not seven times, but seventy times seven!"

# The Impossible Life

## *Lesson 20 – Scriptures*

**“For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is good I find not. For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I delight in the law of God after the inward man: But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?” (Rom. 7:15-24).**

**“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Gal. 5:17).**

**“But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloke also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain” (Matt. 5:39-41).**

**“I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me” (Gal. 2:20).**

**“Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven” (Matt. 18:21-22).**

**“Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things. Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away” (1 Cor. 13:4-8).**



# Releasing Your True Identity

## Lesson 21

.....

You can't please God if you're in the flesh! Romans 7 describes living by your own natural, carnal ability. That's why the results are defeat, failure, and an inability to do the desired good (Rom. 7:19). In your flesh, you can't overcome, turn the other cheek, or forgive an unlimited number of times. That's why Paul said of his flesh:

**“O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?”** (Rom. 7:24).

In other words, Paul asked, “Who will deliver me from this flesh?” The very next verse contains the answer!

**“I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord”** (Rom. 7:25).

Deliverance from the flesh comes through living by who you are in the spirit! From here, Paul launches right into Romans 8 with:

**“There is therefore . . .”** (Rom. 8:1).

“Therefore” refers back to what has previously been said, which is that the flesh cannot please God (Rom. 7). Therefore, you must walk after the Spirit (Rom. 8).

**“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit”** (Rom. 8:1).

Your spirit is the only part of you in Christ Jesus. If you are in the Spirit, there is no condemnation to you whatsoever. That's good news!

Romans 8 is one of the most victorious chapters in the whole Bible! Why? It's written from the perspective of your born-again spirit. The frustration of living after the flesh described in Romans 7 is not the typical Christian life. Romans 7 speaks of a person trying to please God through their own natural effort. “O God, I'm trying to do better. I want to do better, but I just can't!” Why? It's impossible to serve God in the flesh. The word “spirit” is only used once in Romans 7. In contrast, it's used twenty-one times in Romans 8. It's Romans 8 that describes the typical Christian life. You've got to get over into the spirit!

This revelation of spirit, soul, and body unlocks so much of the Christian life! How can you live in the Spirit if you don't know that it was your spirit that changed? When you understand that, you can begin comprehending that who you are and what you have in Christ doesn't fluctuate based on your performance. How can you release something you don't know or don't believe you have? Once you do believe, you must reject the flesh and walk by who you are in the spirit. Cultivate a good image of who you are in Christ, and let that become the real you. It's just a matter of discovering and releasing your true identity!

## *An Extroverted Introvert*

Through this, God's done a miracle in my life! I was extremely introverted before being turned on to the Lord. Because of nervousness and self-consciousness, I couldn't look someone in the face and talk without stammering. Now, God has me speaking to millions of people daily through television and radio. I've ministered to people face to face in meetings all around the world, sometimes up to five thousand at once. Yet I'm not afraid, because it doesn't bother me anymore. I'm focused on who I am in the spirit!

My flesh is the same as it always was. I still have a tendency to be introverted. In fact, when I'm not focused on the Lord and someone catches me in the flesh, I still want to withdraw, not exert myself, and just go sit in the background. This natural part of me hasn't changed.

Most people think they're improving their flesh when they're born again. That's simply not true! You don't improve your natural self through the Christian life; you just become better at denying it. The improvement comes by choosing to recognize your new identity in Christ and letting those thoughts and actions manifest from your spirit.

When I take personality tests now, I always score the maximum in every category for extroverts. That's who I've chosen to be and who I've become in Christ. It's who my born-again spirit is. If you could somehow test me apart from my godly reactions, you'd find I'm still an introvert in my flesh.

## *Living from the Spirit*

The Christian life isn't your natural flesh becoming stronger in godliness so that you don't need the Holy Spirit as much as when you first began. Rather, it's growing stronger in the Spirit and weaker in the flesh. The flesh's dominance steadily diminishes as you learn to consistently depend on and draw out more of what's in your spirit.

Focus on who you are in the spirit by meditating on God's Word, and your flesh will bow the knee to the spirit's rule and reign.

**“Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would”**  
(Gal. 5:16-17).

You'll break the control of the flesh as you base your identity and potential on what the Word says about who you are in Christ. Instead of being controlled by your old carnal self, your spirit man will begin to dominate.

My flesh is still basically timid and shy, but my spirit is as bold as a lion (Prov. 28:1)! Some people who travel on airlines push their way up to the counter and make demands whenever something goes wrong. I'm quite the opposite. I actually set my travel agent cards aside because the ticket agents almost never grant me any of those discounts. I'm just not a pushy guy! Yet I can be very bold and assertive when it comes to spiritual matters, or anything else of value to me.

People have challenged me in services before. It's like the spirit of might comes upon me, and I just take care of it (Is. 11:2). That's because I've learned how to live more from my spirit than my flesh.

# Releasing Your True Identity

## Lesson 21 – Outline

1. You can't please God if you're in the flesh.
  - A. Romans 7 describes living by your own natural, carnal ability.
  - B. That's why the results are defeat, failure, and an inability to do the desired good (Rom. 7:19).
  - C. "Who will deliver me from this flesh?"  
  
**"O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death?"** (Rom. 7:24).
  - D. Deliverance from the flesh comes through living by who you are in the spirit.  
  
**"I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord"** (Rom. 7:25).
2. You must walk after the Spirit (Rom. 8).  
  
**"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit"** (Rom. 8:1).
  - A. Your spirit is the only part of you in Christ Jesus.
  - B. If you're in the Spirit, there is no condemnation to you whatsoever.
3. Romans 8 is one of the most victorious chapters in the whole Bible because it's written from the perspective of your born-again spirit.
  - A. The frustration of living after the flesh described in Romans 7 is not the typical Christian life.
  - B. Romans 8 describes the typical Christian life.
4. This revelation of spirit, soul, and body unlocks so much of the Christian life.
  - A. When you understand that it was your spirit that changed, then you can begin comprehending that who you are and what you have in Christ doesn't fluctuate based on your performance.
  - B. Once you believe, you must reject the flesh and walk by who you are in the spirit.
  - C. As you cultivate a good image of who you are in Christ and it becomes real to you, you'll release and experience your true identity.



5. The Christian life is growing stronger in the Spirit and weaker in the flesh.
- A. The flesh's dominance steadily diminishes as you learn to consistently depend on and draw out more of what's in your spirit.
  - B. Focus on who you are in the spirit by meditating on God's Word, and your flesh will bow the knee to the spirit's rule and reign.

**“Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would”**  
(Gal. 5:16-17).

- C. You'll break the control of the flesh as you base your identity and potential on what the Word says about who you are in Christ.
- D. Instead of being controlled by your old carnal self, your spirit man will begin to dominate.

# Releasing Your True Identity

## *Lesson 21 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. We can’t please God if we’re in the flesh. Romans 7 describes living by our own natural, carnal abilities. That’s why the results are defeat, failure, and an inability to do the desired good (Rom. 7:19). “Who will deliver me from this flesh?” (Rom. 7:24). Deliverance from the flesh comes through living by who we are in the spirit (Rom. 7:25).
2. We must walk after the Spirit (Rom. 8:1). Our spirits are the only part of us in Christ Jesus. If we’re in the Spirit, there is no condemnation to us whatsoever.
3. Romans 8 is one of the most victorious chapters in the whole Bible because it’s written from the perspective of our born-again spirits. The frustration of living after the flesh described in Romans 7 is not the typical Christian life. Romans 8 describes the typical Christian life.
4. This revelation of spirit, soul, and body unlocks so much of the Christian life. When we understand that it was our spirits that changed, then we can begin comprehending that who we are and what we have in Christ doesn’t fluctuate based on our performance. Once we believe, we must reject the flesh and walk by who we are in the spirit. As we cultivate a good image of who we are in Christ and it becomes real to us, we’ll release and experience our true identity.
5. The Christian life is growing stronger in the Spirit and weaker in the flesh. The flesh’s dominance steadily diminishes as we learn to consistently depend on and draw out more of what’s in our spirits. When we focus on who we are in the spirit by meditating on God’s Word, our flesh will bow the knee to the spirit’s rule and reign (Gal. 5:16-17). We’ll break the control of the flesh as we base our identity and potential on what the Word says about who we are in Christ. Instead of being controlled by our old carnal self, our spirit man will begin to dominate.

1. A. What does Romans chapter 7 describe? (Living by our own natural, carnal abilities)  
B. Read Romans 7:24-25. How does deliverance from the flesh come? (Through living by who we are in the spirit)
2. A. How does Romans 8:1 reveal we should walk? (Not after the flesh, but after the Spirit)  
B. If we’re in the Spirit, is there any condemnation to us whatsoever? (No)
3. A. Why is Romans 8 one of the most victorious chapters in the whole Bible? (It’s written from the perspective of our born-again spirits)  
B. Which chapter best represents the typical Christian life—Romans 7 or 8? (Romans 8)
4. A. What is it that unlocks so much of the Christian life? (This revelation of spirit, soul, and body)  
B. How do we release and experience our true identity? (We must cultivate a good image of who we are in Christ so that it becomes real to us)
5. A. What is the Christian life? (It’s growing stronger in the Spirit and weaker in the flesh)  
B. How do we break the control of the flesh? (We base our identity and potential on what the Word says about who we are in Christ)

# Releasing Your True Identity

## *Lesson 21 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What question does Paul ask in Romans 7:24?
2. According to Romans 7:25, what is the answer?
3. What word in Romans 8:1 refers back to what has previously been said?
4. How much condemnation is there now for those who are in Christ Jesus?
  - A. Much.
  - B. Little.
  - C. Some.
  - D. None.
5. Do we walk after the flesh or after the Spirit?
6. Which part of our beings is in Christ Jesus?
7. What best describes Romans 7?
  - A. Frustration.
  - B. Flesh.
  - C. Struggle.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
8. What best describes Romans 8?
  - A. Victory.
  - B. Spirit.
  - C. Love.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
9. According to Galatians 5:16-17, how are we to walk?
10. What happens automatically—as a byproduct—as we walk this way?
11. What does the flesh lust against?
12. What does the Spirit lust against?

13. What one word in verse 17 best describes this relationship between the Spirit and the flesh?
14. What results from this?
15. According to Proverbs 28:1, what do the wicked do?
16. Who are as bold as a lion?
17. List the seven characteristics given of the Holy Spirit in Isaiah 11:2.

# Releasing Your True Identity

## *Lesson 21 – Answer Key*

1. “Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?”
2. “I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord.”
3. Therefore.
4. D. None.
5. After the Spirit.
6. Our born-again spirits.
7. D. All of the above.
8. D. All of the above.
9. In the Spirit.
10. We shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.
11. The Spirit.
12. The flesh.
13. Contrary.
14. We cannot do the things that we would.
15. They flee when nobody pursues them.
16. The righteous.

17. A. The Spirit of the Lord.
- B. The Spirit of wisdom.
- C. The Spirit of understanding.
- D. The Spirit of counsel.
- E. The Spirit of might.
- F. The Spirit of knowledge.
- G. The Spirit of the fear of the Lord.

# Releasing Your True Identity

## *Lesson 21 – Scriptures*

**“For the good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do”**  
(Rom. 7:19).

**“O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin”** (Rom. 7:24-25).

**“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit”** (Rom. 8:1).

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would”** (Gal. 5:16-17).

**“The wicked flee when no man pursueth: but the righteous are bold as a lion”** (Prov. 28:1).

**“And the spirit of the LORD shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD”** (Is. 11:2).





# Mind Your Spirit

## Lesson 22



Through spiritual dyslexia, most people perceive Galatians 5:16 completely backwards!

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh”** (Gal. 5:16).

They recognize that the flesh and the spirit are contrary, but assume that they’re automatically walking in the Spirit if they just deny their flesh. Therefore, they put all of their focus on quitting this and rejecting that, thinking, *If I can just stop doing these bad things and having these foul thoughts, then I’ll be in the Spirit!* Wrong! This verse doesn’t say “Walk in the Spirit, and you’ll hinder the flesh” or “Overcome the flesh, and then you’ll walk in the Spirit.” No, it declares just the opposite: “Walk in the Spirit, and you won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh!”

Darkness is simply the absence of light. You can’t get rid of darkness by shoveling it out of the room. However, if you turn on a light, it’ll flee! When you walk in the Spirit (turn on the light), by default—as a byproduct—you won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh (darkness flees). Willpower is the shovel of the flesh. If you feel you can’t really accept who you are in Christ until after you overcome the darkness in your life—drinking, cussing, smoking, or whatever problems you currently have—you’ll just end up frustrated and stuck (Rom. 7). It’s not that God won’t release His power to you; it’s just that you haven’t yet flipped the switch! Lay that shovel down and turn on the light! Get into God’s Word, and start recognizing and meditating on who you are in Christ. As you focus your attention continually on the reality of your new identity, the brightness of who you are in the spirit will begin to shine in and through you to such a degree that it’ll break the control of the flesh and deliver you from these external problems. Light always overwhelms and chases away the dark!

A friend of mine used to be a well-known secular entertainer who wrote several famous songs. While in this profession, he became born again. After finishing a concert at midnight, he’d hop on the bus with his musicians and start traveling to their next gig. Excited about God and His Word, my friend actually snorted cocaine off the pages of his Bible so he could stay awake and keep reading about how much the Lord loved him!

Today this man has been a pastor for over twenty years! How did he overcome his flesh and its bad habits? Did he quit snorting cocaine and all the other ungodly things he was doing first? No! This man didn’t let his vices keep him from beginning to find out what God’s Word said about him. He centered his attention on discovering who he was in Christ and what all Jesus had done for him. As those things became reality to him, he finally came to a place where God led him out of that lifestyle.

God wants you to come to Him just as you are! After you’re born again and changed inside, renew your mind to who you are in Christ. As you find out who you are in your spirit, you’ll change outwardly as a result. If you’ll just start walking in the Spirit by focusing your attention on the things of God, regardless of what your flesh is like, you’ll break its dominion over you!

### *Focus: Quality & Quantity*

You can know whether you're walking in the Spirit or not by what your attention is on.

**“For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit”** (Rom. 8:5).

What you're thinking about will tell you whether you're in the flesh or the spirit!

Where is your focus? If the doctor says you're going to die, are you more dominated by his word or God's Word? Are you imagining and anticipating sickness, disease, and death? Or are you focused on the scriptures that declare He's taken away all your sickness and by His stripes you were healed of every disease? Are you centered in on the spirit or the flesh?

If your mind is stayed on the things of the flesh, then you're in the flesh. You cannot please God, nor will you be able to succeed against this ailment. You'll die physically even though God's healing and raising-from-the-dead power is already inside your born-again spirit. Whatever your mind focuses on determines whether you're in the flesh or not. It's really that simple!

By learning to keep your mind stayed on God, your spirit will dominate and control your flesh.

**“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** (Rom. 8:6).

This isn't just quality time; it's both quality *and* quantity of time spent focused on the things of God.

Flesh-mindedness is death. “Carnal” means of the five senses. Carnal-mindedness is being fleshly, physical, outward-minded instead of spiritually minded. It's being dominated by your five senses. If your body is facing sickness and you're more in tune with and sensitive to what you feel (flesh) than what you believe (Word), then you're carnal. To be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.

### *Whose Report Will You Believe?*

You need to get to where you believe God's report more than the world's! You've crossed over into the spirit when God's Word dominates you more than what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. Instead of letting the devil tell you what you can't do or somebody else saying that you'll die or your checkbook telling you that you're in deep trouble, you focus your attention on what God says about you, what He says you have, and what He says you can do. Once you do that, you'll find it'll break the dominion, the power, and the control of the flesh over you.

Physical healing was purchased through Christ's atonement. It's not just a “P.S.” to forgiveness of sin; healing is an integral part of what Jesus died to produce. In fact, His sacrifice provides physical healing just as much as forgiveness of sin. God would no more give someone sickness than lead them into sin. Why? Jesus shed His precious blood to completely redeem us from both!

Seeing a truth doesn't mean you'll automatically profit from it. Actually, conflict will normally arise! Hebrews 10:32 reveals that once you're enlightened, you endure "a great fight of afflictions." Why? Satan immediately comes to steal the Word before it takes root in your heart and produces (Mark 4:15 and 19). He attempts to dislodge it when you're at your youngest, when a truth is still new to you, before it's rooted and established as part of who you are.

Once I saw in the Word that it's always God's will to heal, the fight was on! Satan came against me, and I started experiencing sickness more than ever before. Immediately there was intense conflict between my flesh and spirit. My spirit declared, "By His stripes I was healed [1 Pet. 2:24]; it's already done [Eph. 1:18]," and "The same power that raised Jesus Christ from the dead is inside of me [Eph. 1:19-20]." In my spirit, I had this resurrection power, but my flesh kept arguing, "You're sick! You feel terrible and you're about to throw up. Admit it!" There was this incredible conflict between what I saw in my spirit through God's Word and what I felt in my physical body. My flesh and my spirit were fighting each other!

This was just my unrenewed mind, not some old nature inside, trying to make me disbelieve God. For a number of years, my old self taught me how to believe only what I could see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. Anything and everything else was stupid! When he was crucified, my mind was left behind, still programmed to sense knowledge. Everything in my physical, natural, fleshly realm screamed, "You're sick!" My body told me that I hurt. Other people commented on how bad I looked. Therefore, it was a real struggle for my mind to believe what I couldn't see!

I just determined in my heart that I would not give up or give in until I saw with my physical eyes the truth of God's Word manifest in my body. I was so committed to the fact that what God said about me was true that I decided to make myself believe it.

### *Cracking the Dam*

At the time, I was living and pastoring a small church in Seagoville, Texas. I preached healing and had revelation knowledge of it, but I was sick in my body. The devil was fighting me. My flesh and spirit were butting heads!

Since faith without works is dead, I decided one night not to just lie in bed and act sick (James 2:17, 20, and 26). I didn't want to kill my faith by giving in to the pressure. However, it was physically impossible for me to stand up because I was so ill. I had to kneel on the floor in the living room so Jamie could go ahead and sleep. Putting my Bible on the wood floor in front of me, I determined in my heart that I was going to fight this thing!

I spent hours just quoting scriptures on healing. I didn't stop, because I knew I'd fall asleep out of sheer exhaustion if I did. I'd confess aloud, "By His stripes, I was healed." My body would counter, "Oh, no, you're not!" Then I'd answer, "Yes, I am—the Word says so!" This fight continued several hours while I pushed my Bible along and crawled around the room on hands and knees just to stay awake.

You don't have to do it the way I did, but you will have to overcome the same conflict! You don't just say, "All right, I see the truth. Flesh, I now renounce you and choose to walk by the spirit!" No, it'll be a traumatic experience when you turn around and head the other direction. Your

mind and emotions have been indulged now for many years. They've always said that whatever you see is more real than what's invisible. There's going to be a fight, and it probably won't all happen in just one evening's time!

That night proved to be a major break for me. I cracked the dam of flesh that held back the flow of God's life in me. My spirit began dominating from that point forward little by little. I'm still dealing with these same things, but I've grown a lot. I'm seeing tremendous victory in my life, and I'm able to help many other people. I'm still in process, but I'm renewing my mind and winning the battle between my flesh and my spirit.

### ***Overcome Your Flesh***

You overcome by being mindful of what God's Word says about you—especially the New Testament. When you're Word-minded, you're spiritually minded because God's words are spirit and life (John 6:63). In your spirit, you're completely changed, eternal, sanctified, holy, and perfected forever. As Jesus is, so are you! If you'd dominate yourself with those thoughts, all it would produce is life and peace.

If you're having something other than life and peace, then you're something other than spiritually minded (Rom. 8:6). You may desire the right things, praying and begging God for them, but you don't receive victory by desiring or begging for it. You receive the victory He's already achieved and provided for you by focusing your attention on the spirit. When you do that, you'll overcome.

In my opinion, you won't manifest much of the life of God if you're plugged into the world through radio, television, newspapers, and magazines. It takes a lot of effort—real effort—to keep your focus on the things of God. How can you expect different results when you read, watch, listen to, and think all the same things as your unbelieving neighbors? That's ignorance gone to seed! Sure, you might be able to add a devotion and intellectually know that God wants you healed, prospered, and delivered from oppression. You may even have a desire for and sensitivity to God that they don't have. But as far as results go, you won't really experience any more of God's miraculous power in your life as long as you continue thinking on the same carnal things that they do pretty much all day long. To get different results, you have to do something differently!

If you mind the things of the flesh, then you'll be after the flesh; the physical realm will dominate you. You won't be able to please God or experience the victory that's available to you (Rom. 8:8). In order to release God's power and life, you must overcome the flesh by continually focusing your mind on who you are and what you have in the spirit.

# Mind Your Spirit

## Lesson 22 – Outline

1. Through spiritual dyslexia, most people perceive Galatians 5:16 completely backwards!

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh”** (Gal. 5:16).

- A. This verse doesn’t say “Walk in the Spirit, and you’ll hinder the flesh” or “Overcome the flesh, and then you’ll walk in the Spirit.”
  - B. It says just the opposite: “Walk in the Spirit, and you won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh.”
  - C. When you walk in the Spirit (turn on the light), by default—as a byproduct—you won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh (darkness flees).
2. You can know whether you’re walking in the Spirit or not by what your attention is on.

**“For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit”** (Rom. 8:5).

- A. What you’re thinking about will tell you whether you’re in the flesh or the spirit.
  - B. If your mind is stayed on the things of the flesh, then you’re in the flesh.
3. By learning to keep your mind stayed on God, your spirit will dominate and control your flesh.

**“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** (Rom. 8:6).

- A. This isn’t just quality time; it’s both quality *and* quantity of time spent focused on the things of God.
  - B. “Carnal” means of the five senses.
  - C. Carnal-mindedness is being fleshly, physical, outward-minded instead of spiritually minded.
  - D. To be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace.
  - E. You need to get to where God’s Word dominates you more than what you can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.
4. Seeing a truth doesn’t mean you’ll automatically profit from it.
    - A. Normally, conflict will arise.

**“After you were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions”** (Heb. 10:32).

- B. Satan immediately comes to steal the Word before it takes root in your heart and produces (Mark 4:15 and 19).
  - C. He attempts to dislodge it when you're at your youngest, when a truth is still new to you, before it's rooted and established as part of who you are.
5. You overcome by being mindful of what God's Word says about you—especially the New Testament.
- A. When you're Word-minded, you're spiritually minded because God's words are spirit and life (John 6:63).
  - B. If you'd dominate yourself with those thoughts, all it would produce is life and peace.
  - C. If you're having something other than life and peace, then you're something other than spiritually minded (Rom. 8:6).
  - D. You receive the victory He's already achieved and provided for you by focusing your attention on the spirit.
6. You won't manifest much of the life of God if you're plugged into the world through radio, television, newspapers, and magazines.
- A. It takes a lot of effort—real effort—to keep your focus on the things of God.
  - B. How can you expect different results when you read, watch, listen to, and think all the same things as your unbelieving neighbors?
  - C. In order to release God's power and life, you must overcome the flesh by continually focusing your mind on who you are and what you have in the spirit.

# Mind Your Spirit

*Lesson 22 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. Through spiritual dyslexia, most people perceive Galatians 5:16 completely backwards! This verse doesn’t say “Walk in the Spirit, and you’ll hinder the flesh” or “Overcome the flesh, and then you’ll walk in the Spirit;” it says just the opposite: “Walk in the Spirit, and you won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh.” When we walk in the Spirit (turn on the light), by default—as a byproduct—we won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh (darkness flees).
2. We can know whether we’re walking in the Spirit or not by what our attention is on (Rom. 8:5). What we’re thinking about will tell us whether we’re in the flesh or the spirit. If our minds are stayed on the things of the flesh, then we’re in the flesh.
3. By learning to keep our minds stayed on God, our spirits will dominate and control our flesh (Rom. 8:6). This isn’t just quality time; it’s both quality *and* quantity of time spent focused on the things of God. “Carnal” means of the five senses. Carnal-mindedness is being fleshly, physical, outward-minded instead of spiritually minded. To be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. We need to get to where God’s Word dominates us more than what we can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel.

1. A. Most people perceive Galatians 5:16 completely \_\_\_\_\_. (Backwards)  
B. What happens as a byproduct—by default—when we walk in the Spirit (turn on the light)? (We won’t fulfill the lust of the flesh [darkness flees])
2. A. According to Romans 8:5, how can we tell whether we’re walking in the Spirit or not? (By what our minds are on)  
B. If our minds are stayed on the things of the flesh, then what are we? (In the flesh)
3. A. What does Romans 8:6 call being fleshly, physical, outward-minded? (Carnal-minded)  
B. What does being spiritually minded produce? (Life and peace)



4. Seeing a truth doesn't mean we'll automatically profit from it. Normally, conflict will arise (Heb. 10:32). Satan immediately comes to steal the Word before it takes root in our hearts and produces (Mark 4:15 and 19). He attempts to dislodge it when we're at our youngest, when a truth is still new to us, before it's rooted and established as part of who we are.
5. We overcome by being mindful of what God's Word says about us—especially the New Testament. When we're Word-minded, we're spiritually minded because God's words are spirit and life (John 6:63). If we'd dominate ourselves with those thoughts, all it would produce is life and peace. If we're having something other than life and peace, then we're something other than spiritually minded (Rom. 8:6). We receive the victory He's already achieved and provided for us by focusing our attention on the spirit.
6. We won't manifest much of the life of God if we're plugged into the world through radio, television, newspapers, and magazines. It takes a lot of effort—real effort—to keep our focus on the things of God. How can we expect different results when we read, watch, listen to, and think all the same things as our unbelieving neighbors? In order to release God's power and life, we must overcome the flesh by continually focusing our minds on who we are and what we have in the spirit.

4. A. According to Hebrews 10:32, what normally arises immediately after we've seen a truth? (Conflict—a great fight of afflictions)
- B. What does Mark 4:15 and 19 reveal that Satan tries to do before a truth is rooted and established as a part of who we are? (Steal the Word)
5. A. Read John 6:63 and Romans 8:6. When we are mindful of what God's Word says about us, what are we? (Spiritually minded)
- B. How do we receive the victory He's already achieved and provided for us? (By focusing our attention on the spirit)
6. A. Can we expect different results when we read, watch, listen to, and think all the same things as our unbelieving neighbors? (No)
- B. How do we overcome the flesh and release God's power and life? (By continually focusing our minds on who we are and what we have in the spirit)



# **Mind Your Spirit**

## *Lesson 22 – Additional Information*

For an in-depth look at healing, I recommend my teaching entitled *God Wants You Well*.

Recently I was required to take a treadmill test while receiving a qualifying physical for an insurance policy. However, since I refused to allow them to shave my chest hair, the electrodes fell off after only twelve minutes. Several weeks later, the insurance company called and said they couldn't insure me. They cited the fact that my readings indicated I had a serious heart problem that surfaced at about the twelfth minute of the test. When I asked them if the electrodes falling off would've made a difference or not, they decided to give me another test.

This time I let them shave my chest, but not before informing the nurse that she was removing virgin hair! I finished the test without incident and waited for the doctor to review my results. He was fine with my readings up until about the thirteenth minute of the test. That's when he got a worried look on his face and told me I had a serious problem. This medical professional then advised me of my "need" to see a specialist that very day and began writing out the note for me to give to this other doctor.

I boldly looked this man in the face and declared, "I don't believe your results!" It was easy to see that he wasn't used to someone countering his opinion. However, I challenged him to look again at the printout and then honestly tell me that I had a heart problem.

He replied, "Well, this doesn't really say you have a heart problem. It's just that your results aren't completely typical. Since everyone's heart is a little different, you could be totally healthy. I just think you should go get another test!"

"That's not what you said!" I thundered. "You told me I had a serious heart problem, not that there's a small chance and you think I should get another opinion."

This guy backed down and sputtered, "You're fine. Just forget about that other test."

Most people would have taken the word of this doctor over the Word of God, which emphatically declares that we're healed. By the time they finished obsessing about it, their hearts would have failed—from fear (Luke 21:26)! The next time you're faced with a report that's contrary to God's, whose report will you choose to believe?

# **Mind Your Spirit**

*Lesson 22 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What do people who interpret Galatians 5:16 backwards normally think and/or say about this verse?
  - A. Overcome the flesh, and then you'll walk in the Spirit.
  - B. Walk in the Spirit, and you'll hinder the flesh.
  - C. If I can just stop doing these bad things and having these foul thoughts, then I'll be in the Spirit.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
2. Darkness is simply the absence of light. If walking in the Spirit is like turning on a light, then darkness fleeing is like what?
3. Which chapter best describes the victory of walking in the spirit, Romans 7 or 8?
4. Which chapter best describes the frustration of walking in the flesh, Romans 7 or 8?
5. According to Romans 8:5, what's on the mind of believers who are after the flesh?
6. What's on the mind of believers who are after the Spirit?
7. How can we tell whether we're walking after the flesh or after the Spirit?
8. According to Romans 8:6, what produces death?
9. What produces life and peace?
10. If we're experiencing something other than life and peace, what are we?
11. Read Hebrews 10:32. Remember those times when you were first enlightened to a particular truth from God's Word? What normally occurred immediately afterwards?
12. According to Mark 4:15, what is Satan's goal for this?
13. What else does Mark 4:19 say that the devil uses to cause the Word to become unfruitful in our lives?
14. Read 1 Peter 2:24. Who is the first half of the verse referring to?

15. Who is the second half of the verse referring to?
16. By whose stripes were we healed?
17. The words “were healed” are in what tense?
  - A. Past.
  - B. Present.
  - C. Future.
18. According to Ephesians 1:18-20, what do the eyes of our hearts need to be enlightened to?
  - A. The hope of His calling.
  - B. The riches of the glory of His inheritance in the saints.
  - C. The exceeding greatness of His power toward us-ward who believe.
  - D. All of the above.
  - E. None of the above.
19. What main idea does James 2:17, 20, and 26 all have in common?
20. Since the Holy Spirit recorded this concept three times in one New Testament chapter, do you think it’s something He wants us to understand?
21. According to John 6:63, what is the life-giving part of our beings?
22. What profits us nothing?
23. God’s words—written down for us in the Word—are what?
24. According to Romans 8:8, who cannot please God?

# Mind Your Spirit

## *Lesson 22 – Answer Key*

1. D. All of the above.
2. Not fulfilling the lust of the flesh.
3. Romans 8.
4. Romans 7.
5. The things of the flesh.
6. The things of the Spirit.
7. By what's on our minds, what we're thinking about, and what has our attention.
8. Carnal-mindedness.
9. Spiritual-mindedness.
10. Something other than spiritually minded.
11. A great fight of afflictions.
12. To take away the Word that was sown in our hearts.
13. The cares of this world, the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things.
14. Jesus.
15. Us.
16. The Lord's.
17. A. Past.
18. D. All of the above.

19. Faith without works is dead.

20. Yes.

21. Our spirits.

22. Our flesh.

23. Spirit and life.

24. Those who are in the flesh.

# Mind Your Spirit

## *Lesson 22 – Scriptures*

**“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh” (Gal. 5:16).**

**“For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace” (Rom. 8:5-6).**

**“But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions” (Heb. 10:32).**

**“And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. . . . And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful” (Mark 4:15 and 19).**

**“Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed” (1 Pet. 2:24).**

**“The eyes of your understanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places” (Eph. 1:18-20).**

**“Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. . . . But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? . . . For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also” (James 2:17, 20, and 26).**

**“It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life” (John 6:63).**

**“So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God” (Rom. 8:8).**

**“Men’s hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken” (Luke 21:26).**

# Time to Leave!

## Lesson 23

.....

When you make Jesus Christ Lord of your life by truly believing on Him, an instantaneous change takes place. This change occurs in your spirit, not your flesh (i.e., your body and soul). Whether the change ever manifests itself in your physical realm depends on what you think.

The flesh, your natural self, pulls in one direction, and your spirit leads you in another. How you think determines what you experience. If your mind stays only on physical things—not even necessarily sinful things—then you’ll be limited to and dominated by your flesh. You might even be a very moral person, but you won’t experience the supernatural life of God.

The only way you’ll experience the power of God within you is to walk in the Spirit. Believing God to raise someone from the dead goes beyond just living a good life. You must believe in something that has no proof or evidence in the physical realm whatsoever. You have to get beyond the physical and acknowledge that there is a spiritual world. As you recognize your true power and believe, the spiritual realm will become more real to you than the physical.

This applies to prosperity too! There will be times when there’s no basis for faith in your physical facts. Your bank statement won’t prove it. Everything in the natural may be coming against the Word, but if you stay in the spirit, fixed on what God’s Word says, you’ll be able to see yourself prosperous when everyone else tries to repossess your house, car, etc. As you hold on to God’s Word, your spirit will overcome your flesh and break its dominion. That’s when you’ll see the Word manifest!

### *Peace*

You can be spiritually minded! Whatever you continually think on will dominate you (Prov. 23:7). If it’s who you are and what you have in Christ, then that’s what will eventually manifest itself in your physical life.

One-third of your salvation is already complete! Your born-again spirit isn’t in the process of growing or maturing. Right now in your spirit, you are exactly the way you’ll be throughout eternity (1 John 4:17). You have a physical body and soul that haven’t been changed yet. They are subject to change and can change, but it’s not automatic. However, the change of your spirit at salvation was total, complete, and automatic.

Whether you ever see your true spiritual potential released into your physical life or not depends on what you think (Rom. 12:2). If natural things—either sinful or just plain carnal—dominate and control your thoughts, you’ll shut off the flow of God’s Spirit through you. But if you dominate yourself with the truths of His Word and get beyond the natural limitations of your five senses, you can start releasing the supernatural life that’s inside you.

You'll be able to experience a peace that passes understanding. Even when it seems like everyone's against you and everything's crashing in the physical realm, you'll enjoy God's supernatural peace as long as you stay focused on the Word.

**“And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus” (Phil. 4:7).**

On the night before His crucifixion, Jesus told His disciples:

**“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me” (John 14:1).**

To the natural mind, this sounds unreasonable in light of the situation. Their Messiah, the One they loved and worshiped, was about to be executed. There's no natural way they could have peace in the midst of something like that, but Jesus had given them His Word. He'd told them many times, “I'll be crucified, but I'll rise again on the third day.” If they had meditated on and dominated themselves by what Jesus had said, they would have released the supernatural peace of God they needed for that trying situation.

### ***What Will You Think?***

If you want to experience God's best, you must understand these truths concerning spirit, soul, and body. You have unlimited potential, but it's all in the spirit. The victory God's given you isn't in your flesh; it's in the part of you that's been born again. As you mature in the Christian life, you don't become less carnal; you just let less carnality dominate and manifest, because you're yielded to the spirit instead.

Through God's Word, concentrate on seeing who you are in Christ. Spend less time feeding the flesh, and focus on the spirit instead. Surround yourself with people who speak faith, are positive, and center in on the potential we have in Christ, instead of those who gripe and complain. You'll develop an entire mentality based on your new identity in Christ as you dominate yourself with what you see in the spiritual mirror of God's Word.

Nothing can separate you from God's love, because your born-again spirit has been sanctified and perfected forever. God is a Spirit, and He sees you in the spirit (John 4:24). He fellowships with you Spirit to born-again spirit. God doesn't give you what you deserve based on your thoughts and physical actions in your flesh; rather, He deals with you in the spirit realm. That's why He'll receive you at any time, in any condition—you're His beloved child!

You're constantly being fed information and drawn in one of two directions—the flesh or the spirit (Gal. 5:17). The Holy Spirit always endeavors to draw you toward God and remind you of your new identity in Christ. Satan, through the world, its images and voices—news media, movies, books, newspapers, magazines, associations, and even church organizations who are mistaken in some of their beliefs—constantly pushes you to accept defeat. What you continually think on is what you'll experience (Prov. 23:7).



Your flesh and spirit constantly fight each other in your mind. God proclaims, “You can do all things through Christ.” The world answers, “No, you can’t. You’re just a failure!” On and on, the daily battle rages. That’s why this life-changing truth isn’t just something you learn one time and conclude, “I’ve got it!” This understanding of spirit, soul, and body should motivate you to aggressively pursue renewing your mind to God’s Word—a process that’ll continue for the rest of your life!

### *Soak Your Mind*

Soak your mind in these truths that God has spoken. You might need to go back and reread your notes in a week or in a couple of months. Perhaps you should consider ordering the CD or DVD series so you can listen to this teaching again and again. Whatever you do, meditate these truths until they come alive to you. Then keep them refreshed by occasionally referring back to them.

God spoke these truths to me decades ago, but I’m still in the process of renewing my mind to them. Over time, He’s been expanding, developing, and giving me even more understanding on this. I feel like the Apostle Paul, who after twenty or more years of knowing and serving God, said:

**“Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus” (Phil. 3:13-14).**

Don’t be discouraged! I’m not saying you have to wait a long time before you see any results. I just want you to know that until you see Him face to face, you never arrive; you just leave. And if the Lord has spoken to you through this teaching, you need to leave right now! Turn from carnal-mindedness, and start being dominated by your born-again spirit instead. Discover the realities concerning who you are in the spirit, and let them control you. When you do, you’ll experience life and peace. It really is that simple!

But it’s not easy! In fact, changing your focus from the flesh to the spirit is one of the hardest things you’ll ever do. It’s a gradual, but total, reprogramming of your natural mind to agree with your spirit. Through renewing your mind to God’s Word, you can become spiritually minded!

What God has spoken to you through this study has the potential of radically changing your life, but applying these truths will take some real focus and effort on your part. However, the good news is that God wants you to fully understand and walk in them even more than you do! He’ll faithfully do His part if you’ll just head in that direction, acknowledging, “God, it’s going to take a miracle to renew my mind! It’s so used to being dominated by the flesh. I’m really going to need Your help!” The Holy Spirit will reveal to you who you are in Christ. He’ll show you Jesus, spiritual truth, and reality. It just takes commitment and effort on your part to focus on the Word and the spirit.

### ***Begin Now***

In light of what the Lord has shown you, I encourage you to pray out loud the following prayer from your heart:

***“Father, I open my heart to the Holy Spirit to continue revealing these truths to me. I recognize that this is a process and not just a one-time thing. Therefore, I ask You to give me greater revelation of spirit, soul, and body throughout the rest of my life. As I apply what You’ve shown me, please encourage me with some quick results. I want to establish new patterns of walking by the spirit so I can live a full and effective life in You.***

***“Thank You for bringing these truths to my remembrance when I need them. Thank You for helping me to share them with others so they, too, can break free from their flesh’s dominion. Thank You for setting me free and using me to set many others free! I love You, Father! Amen.”***

# Time to Leave!

## *Lesson 23 – Outline*

1. When you make Jesus Christ Lord of your life by truly believing on Him, an instantaneous change takes place.
  - A. This change occurs in your spirit, not your flesh (i.e., your body and soul).
  - B. Whether the change ever manifests itself in your physical realm depends on what you think.
2. The flesh, your natural self, pulls in one direction, and your spirit leads you in another.
  - A. How you think determines what you experience.
  - B. If your mind stays only on physical things—not even necessarily sinful things—then you’ll be limited to and dominated by your flesh.
3. The only way you’ll experience the power of God within you is to walk in the Spirit.
  - A. You have to get beyond the physical and acknowledge that there is a spiritual world.
  - B. As you recognize your true power and believe, the spiritual realm will become more real to you than the physical.
  - C. Everything in the natural may be coming against the Word, but if you stay in the spirit, fixed on what God’s Word says, your spirit will overcome your flesh and break its dominion.
  - D. That’s when you’ll see the Word manifest.
4. Whether you ever see your true spiritual potential released into your physical life or not depends on what you think (Rom. 12:2).
  - A. If natural things—either sinful or just plain carnal—dominate and control your thoughts, you’ll shut off the flow of God’s Spirit through you.
  - B. But if you dominate yourself with the truths of God’s Word and get beyond the natural limitations of your five senses, you can start releasing the supernatural life that’s inside you.
5. As long as you stay focused on the Word, you’ll be able to experience a peace that passes understanding.

**“And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus” (Phil. 4:7).**

**“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me” (John 14:1).**

6. If you want to experience God's best, you must understand these truths concerning spirit, soul, and body.
  - A. Spend less time feeding the flesh, and focus on the spirit instead.
  - B. You'll develop an entire mentality based on your new identity in Christ as you dominate yourself with what you see in the spiritual mirror of God's Word.
  - C. Soak your mind in these truths that God has spoken.
7. Renewing your mind to God's Word is a lifelong process.
  - A. Until you see Jesus face to face, you never arrive; you just leave.
  - B. Applying these truths will take some real focus and effort on your part.
  - C. The Holy Spirit will reveal to you who you are in Christ.
  - D. Pray out loud from your heart:

***“Father, I open my heart to the Holy Spirit to continue revealing these truths to me. I recognize that this is a process and not just a one-time thing. Therefore, I ask You to give me greater revelation of spirit, soul, and body throughout the rest of my life. As I apply what You've shown me, please encourage me with some quick results. I want to establish new patterns of walking by the spirit so I can live a full and effective life in You.***

***“Thank You for bringing these truths to my remembrance when I need them. Thank You for helping me to share them with others so they, too, can break free from their flesh's dominion. Thank You for setting me free and using me to set many others free! I love You, Father! Amen.”***

# Time to Leave!

*Lesson 23 – Teacher’s Guide*

1. When we make Jesus Christ Lord of our lives by truly believing on Him, an instantaneous change takes place. This change occurs in our spirits, not our flesh (i.e., body and soul). Whether the change ever manifests itself in our physical realm depends on what we think.
2. The flesh, our natural self, pulls in one direction, and our spirits lead us in another. How we think determines what we experience. If our minds stay only on physical things—not even necessarily sinful things—then we’ll be limited to and dominated by our flesh.
3. The only way we’ll experience the power of God within us is to walk in the Spirit. We have to get beyond the physical and acknowledge that there is a spiritual world. As we recognize our true power and believe, the spiritual realm will become more real to us than the physical. Everything in the natural may be coming against the Word, but if we stay in the spirit, fixed on what His Word says, our spirits will overcome our flesh and break its dominion. That’s when we’ll see the Word manifest.
4. Whether we ever see our true spiritual potential released into our physical lives or not depends on what we think (Rom. 12:2). If natural things—either sinful or just plain carnal—dominate and control our thoughts, we’ll shut off the flow of God’s Spirit through us. But if we dominate ourselves with the truths of God’s Word and get beyond the natural limitations of our five senses, we can start releasing the supernatural life that’s inside us.

1. A. Where does the change occur the instant we believe on the Lord Jesus Christ? (In our spirits)  
B. Whether the change ever manifests itself in our physical realm depends on what? (What we think)
2. A. What do we call our natural selves? (The flesh)  
B. If our minds stay only on physical things, then we’ll be limited to and dominated by what? (Our flesh)
3. A. What is the only way we’ll experience the power of God within us? (We must walk in the Spirit)  
B. What happens when—despite everything in the natural realm coming against the Word—we stay in the spirit, fixed on what God’s Word says? (We overcome our flesh and see the Word manifest)
4. A. According to Romans 12:2, whether we ever see our true spiritual potential released into our physical lives or not depends on what? (What we think)  
B. What happens when we dominate ourselves with the truths of God’s Word and get beyond the natural limitations of our five senses? (We can start releasing the supernatural life that’s inside us)

5. As long as we stay focused on the Word, we'll be able to experience a peace that passes understanding (Phil. 4:7 and John 14:1).
6. If we want to experience God's best, we must understand these truths concerning spirit, soul, and body. We need to spend less time feeding the flesh and focus on the spirit instead. We'll develop an entire mentality based on our new identity in Christ as we dominate ourselves with what we see in the spiritual mirror of God's Word. We need to soak our minds in these truths that God has spoken.
7. Renewing our minds to God's Word is a lifelong process. Until we see Jesus face to face, we never arrive; we just leave. Applying these truths will take some real focus and effort on our part. The Holy Spirit will reveal to us who we are in Christ.

5. A. What did Jesus command His disciples in John 14:1? ("Let not your heart be troubled, but believe in Me")
  - B. According to Philippians 4:7, what kind of peace will we experience as long as we stay focused on the Word? (A peace that passes understanding)
6. A. We need to spend less time feeding the flesh and more time doing what? (Focusing on the spirit)
  - B. In order to develop an entire mentality based on our new identity in Christ, we must \_\_\_\_\_? (Dominate ourselves with what we see in the spiritual mirror of God's Word)
7. A. What will it take for us to apply these truths to our lives? (Some real focus and effort)
  - B. How long must we continue the process of renewing our minds to God's Word? (The rest of our lives)

Spend some time in prayer responding to what God has shown you through this study. You may wish to use the following prayer as a model:

***"Father, I open my heart to the Holy Spirit to continue revealing these truths to me. I recognize that this is a process and not just a one-time thing. Therefore, I ask You to give me greater revelation of spirit, soul, and body throughout the rest of my life. As I apply what You've shown me, please encourage me with some quick results. I want to establish new patterns of walking by the spirit so I can live a full and effective life in You.***

***"Thank You for bringing these truths to my remembrance when I need them. Thank You for helping me to share them with others so they, too, can break free from their flesh's dominion. Thank You for setting me free and using me to set many others free! I love You, Father! Amen."***

# **Time to Leave!**

## *Lesson 23 – Additional Information*

Christ's last-minute instructions to His disciples for overcoming crisis situations are thoroughly unpacked in my teaching entitled *Christian Survival Kit*.

# **Time to Leave!**

*Lesson 23 – Discipleship Questions*

1. What key principle is revealed through the first half of Proverbs 23:7?
2. Read 1 John 4:17. As born-again believers, how are we in this world?
3. According to Romans 12:2, what are we not to do?
4. How are we transformed?
5. How does Philippians 4:7 describe God’s peace?
6. What does it keep?
7. In John 14:1, what did Jesus command us not to do?
8. What did He command us to do?
9. According to John 4:24, God is what?
10. How must we worship Him?
11. How must we approach Him?
12. According to Galatians 5:17, what are the two contrary directions from which we are constantly being fed information and drawn toward?
13. Read Philippians 3:13-14. Did the Apostle Paul consider himself to have “arrived”?
14. What two aspects—working together at the same time—enabled Paul to press toward the mark?
15. What did Paul press toward the mark for?
16. As we press toward the same mark and prize, what must we forget and what must we reach toward?



# **Time to Leave!**

*Lesson 23 – Answer Key*

1. As we think in our hearts, so are we.
2. As Jesus is.
3. Be conformed to this world.
4. By the renewing of our minds.
5. A peace that passes all understanding.
6. Our hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.
7. To not let our hearts be troubled.
8. Believe God.
9. A Spirit.
10. In spirit and in truth.
11. Through who we are in our born-again spirits.
12. The flesh and the Spirit.
13. No.
14. Forgetting those things which are behind and reaching forth unto those things which are before.
15. The prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus.
16. Those things which are behind and those things which are before.

# **Time to Leave!**

## *Lesson 23 – Scriptures*

**“For as he thinketh in his heart, so is he: Eat and drink, saith he to thee; but his heart is not with thee” (Prov. 23:7).**

**“Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world” (1 John 4:17).**

**“And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God” (Rom. 12:2).**

**“And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus” (Phil. 4:7).**

**“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me” (John 14:1).**

**“God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:24).**

**“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Gal. 5:17).**

**“Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus” (Phil. 3:13-14).**

## Receive Jesus as Your Savior

Choosing to receive Jesus Christ as your Lord and Savior is the most important decision you'll ever make!

God's Word promises:

**“If thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation”** (Rom. 10:9-10)

His Word also promises:

**“Whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved”** (Rom. 10:13).

By His grace, God has already done everything to provide salvation. Your part is simply to believe and receive.

Pray out loud, ***“Jesus, I confess that You are my Lord and Savior. I believe in my heart that God raised You from the dead. By faith in Your Word, I receive salvation now. Thank You for saving me!”***

The very moment you commit your life to Jesus Christ, the truth of His Word instantly comes to pass in your spirit. Now that you're born again, there's a brand-new you!

Please contact our Helpline (719-635-1111) and let us know that you've prayed to receive Jesus as your Savior. We would like to rejoice with you and help you understand more fully what has taken place in your life. We'll send you a free gift that will help you grow in your new relationship with the Lord. *Welcome to your new life!*

# Receive the Holy Spirit

As His child, your loving heavenly Father wants to give you the supernatural power you need to live this new life.

**“For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. . . . How much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?”** (Luke 11:10 and 13b)

All you have to do is ask, believe, and receive!

Pray, *“Father, I recognize my need for Your power to live this new life. Please fill me with Your Holy Spirit. By faith, I receive it right now. Thank You for baptizing me. Holy Spirit, You are welcome in my life.”*

Congratulations! Now you’re filled with God’s supernatural power!

Some syllables from a language you don’t recognize will rise up from your heart to your mouth (1 Cor. 14:14). As you speak them out loud by faith, you’re releasing God’s power from within and building yourself up in your spirit (1 Cor. 14:4). You can do this whenever and wherever you like.

It doesn’t really matter whether you felt anything or not when you prayed to receive the Holy Spirit. If you believed in your heart that you received, then God’s Word promises that you did:

**“Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them”** (Mark 11:24).

God always honors His Word. Believe it!

Please contact our Helpline (719-635-1111) and let us know that you’ve prayed to be filled with the Holy Spirit. We would like to rejoice with you and send you a free gift that will help you understand more fully what has taken place in your life.

# Andrew's Teaching Recommendations in This Study Guide

## Lesson 4

### You've Already Got It!

Are you trying to get God to heal, bless, deliver, or prosper you? If so, stop it! God has already done all He will ever do for you. Find out more through this teaching.

Item Code: 1033-C	CD series
Item Code: 1033-D	As-Seen-on-TV DVD series
Item Code: 320	Paperback book
Item Code: 420	Study guide
Item Code: 732	Spanish paperback book

## Lesson 10

### “The Purpose of the Law”

*“By the law is the knowledge of sin”* (Rom. 3:20). The Law wasn't meant to help you in your battle against sin, but to bring you to your need for a Savior. Listen as Andrew explains.

Item Code: E02-C	Single CD
------------------	-----------

### The True Nature of God

Is He the God of judgment found in the Old Testament, or the God of mercy and grace found in the New Testament? The answer will set you free and give you confidence in your relationship with God.

Item Code: 1002-C	CD series
Item Code: 1002-D	As-Seen-on-TV DVD series
Item Code: 308	Paperback book
Item Code: 743	Spanish spiral-bound book

## Lesson 16

### “Revelation Knowledge”

This teaching explains what revelation knowledge is and how to access it by praying in tongues and believing you receive an interpretation. Your whole life can be changed with this knowledge.

Item Code: C04-C	Single CD
------------------	-----------

### The New You & The Holy Spirit

You need to understand what happened when you received Jesus as your Lord and Savior. When you do, you're ready for what's next—the baptism of the Holy Spirit. Learn what the Bible has to say about the Holy Spirit's role in your life. This is crucial to a successful walk with God.

Item Code: 1078-C	CD series
Item Code: 1078-D	As-Seen-on-TV DVD series
Item Code: 323	Paperback book
Item Code: 423	Study guide
Item Code: 734	Spanish spiral-bound book
Item Code: 769	Spanish study guide

## **Lesson 20**

### **Life for Today Study Bible and Commentary: Romans Edition**

The book of Romans contains the doctrinal foundation for the Christian faith and is the longest and clearest exposé by the Apostle Paul on the Gospel. An understanding of the truths expressed in this book are essential not only to the salvation of every individual, but also to the maturing and success of every Christian.

Item Code: 305	Hardback book
----------------	---------------

## **Lesson 22**

### **God Wants You Well**

Is what you believe good for your health? If you think God uses sickness to teach you something, you might want to think again. Your health depends on it!

Item Code: 1036-C	CD series
Item Code: 1036-D	As-Seen-on-TV DVD series
Item Code: 330	Paperback book
Item Code: 430	Study guide
Item Code: 740	Spanish spiral-bound book
Item Code: 749	Spanish study guide

## **Lesson 23**

### **Christian Survival Kit**

Jesus knew His disciples would face the most trying time of their lives when He went to the cross. So, the night before His crucifixion, He gave them vital survival instructions that apply to your life today!

Item Code: 1001-C	CD series
Item Code: 1001-D	As-Seen-on-TV DVD series

## About the Author

Andrew Wommack's life was forever changed the moment he encountered the supernatural love of God on March 23, 1968. The author of more than thirty books, Andrew has made it his mission for five decades to change the way the world sees God.

Andrew's vision is to go as far and deep with the Gospel as possible. His message goes far through the *Gospel Truth* television and radio program, which is available to nearly half the world's population. The message goes deep through discipleship at Charis Bible College, founded in 1994, which has campuses across the United States and around the globe.

